THE

# HISTORY

OFTHE

### ADVENTURES

OF

## IOSEPH ANDREWS,

AND HIS FRIEND

Mr. ABRAHAM ADAMS.

BY

HENRY FIELDING, EG;

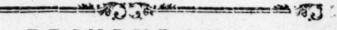
Written in IMITATION of

The Manner of CERVANTES,

AUTHOR of

DON QUIXOTE.

VOL. II.



### EDINBURGH:

hinted by A. Donaldson, and fold at his Shopeat the corner of Arundel-Street, Strand, London, and at Edinburgh.

MDCCLXX.

BENE

F

J

×

be the bit to



THE

## HISTORY

OFTHE

## ADVENTURES

OF

Joseph Andrews, and his Friend Mr.
ABRAHAM ADAMS.

### BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

Matter prefatory in praise of Biography.

Otwithstanding the preference which may be vulgarly given to the authority of those romance writers who intitle their books, "The History of England, the History of France, of Spain," &c. it is most certain, that truth is to be found only in the works of those who celebrate the lives of great men, and are commonly called biographers, as the others should indeed be termer topographers or chorographers; words, which might

tab

the

as blo

eve

this

err

tha

wei

in t

be (

Hif

and

who

lect

prel

tho

and

fron

wer

poff

crea

mate

ferv

they

than

of h

Balz

ture.

frit

cann

as W

fpeal

the e

" ry

Inde

might well mark the distinction between them; it being the business of the latter chiefly to describe countries and cities, which, with the affiftance of maps, they do pretty justly, and may be depended upon: but as to the actions and characters of men, their writings are not quite fo authentic, of which there needs no other proof than these eternal con. tradictions occurring between two topographers who undertake the history of the same country; for instance, between my Lord Clarendon and Mr. Whit. lock, between Mr. Echard and Mr. Rapin, and many others; where facts being fet forth in a different light, every reader believes as he pleases; and indeed the more judicious and fuspicious very justly esteem the whole as no other than a romance, in which the writer hath indulged a happy and fertile invention. But though these widely differ in the narrative of facts, some ascribing victory to the one, and others to the other party: fome reprefenting the fame man as a rogue, while others give him a great and honest character; yet all agree in the scene where the fact is supposed to have happened, and where the person, who is both a rogue and an honest man, lived. Now, with us biographers the case is different; the fact we deliver may be relied on, though we often miftake the age and country wherein they happened; for though it may be worth the examination of critics, whether the shepherd Chrysostom, who, as Cervantes informs us, died for love of the fair Marcella, who hated him, was ever in Spain; will any one doubt but that fuch a filly fellow hath really existed? Is there in the world fuch a sceptic as to disbelieve the madness of Cardenio, the perfidy of Ferdinand, the impertinent curiofity of Anselmo, the weakness of Camilla the irrefolute friendship of Lothario: though perhaps as to the time and place where those several persons lived, that good historian may be deplorably delicient? But the most known instance of this kind

1,

h

1.

1.

1.

bi

-

S;

гу

e,

r.

in

he

re.

ve

he

ed, an

he

ied

iry rth

erd

ied

vas

h a

rld

de-

cu-

the

aps

efi-

di

in the true history of Gil Blas, where the inimitable biographer hath made a notorious blunder in the country of Dr. Sangrado, who used his patients as a vintner doth his wine-veffels, by letting out their blood, and filling them up with water. Doth not every one, who is the least versed in physical history, know that Spain was not the country in which this doctor lived? The fame writer hath likewise erred in the country of his archbishop, as well as that of those great personages whose understandings were too fublime to tafte any thing but tragedy, and in many others. The fame mistakes may likewise be observed in Scarron, the Arabian Nights, the History of Marianne, and Le Paison Parvenu, and perhaps some few other writers of this class, whom I have not read, or do not at prefent recollect: for I would by no means be thought to comprehend those persons of surprising genius, the authors of immense romances, or the modern novel and Atalantis writers: who, without any affiftance from nature or history, record persons who never were, or will be, and facts which never did, nor possibly can happen; whose heroes are of their own creation, and their brains the chaos whence all their materials are felected. Not that fuch writers deferve no honour; fo far otherwise, that perhaps they merit the highest: for what can be nobler than to be as an example of the wonderful extent of human genius! One may apply to them what Balzar fays of Aristotle, That they are a second nature, (for they have no communication with the inft:) by which authors of an inferior class, who tannot stand alone, or obliged to support themselves swith crutches. But thefe of whom I am now peaking seem to be possessed of these stilts which, be excellent Voltaire tells us, in his Letters, " car-"ry the genius far off, but with an irregular pace." Indeed far out of the fight of the reader. Beyond

no affii

law

fcri

on i

ima

fello

part

whe

for

to e

tem

the

cont

duce

ion

bour

fron

he

rent

s ar

T

ider afhi

he o

Thu

vou

duri

aave

ehi

irm,

on a

of te

nifer

fen

rom

por

here

han

Beyond the realm of Chaos and old Night.

But to return to the former class, who are contented to copy nature, instead of forming originals from the confused heap of matter in their own brains; is not such a book as that which records the atchievements of the renowned Don Quixote, more worthy the name of a history than even Mariana's: for whereas the latter is confined to a particular period of time, and to a particular nation; the former is the history of the world in general, at least that part which is polished by laws, arts and sciences; and of that, from the time it was first polished, to this day; nay, and forwards, as long as it shall so remain.

I shall now proceed to apply these observations to the work before us; for indeed I have fet them down principally to obviate fome construction which the good-nature of mankind, who are always forward to fee their friends virtues recorded, may put to particular parts. I question not but several of my readers will know the lawyer in the flagecoach, the moment they hear his voice. It is like wife odds, but the wit and the prude meet with fome of their acquaintance, as well as all the rest of my characters. To prevent, therefore, any fuch malicious applications, I declare here, once for all I describe not men, but manners; not an individual, but a species. Perhaps it will be answered, Are not the character then taken from life? To which answer in the affirmative; nay, I believe I migh aver, that I have writ little more than I have feen The lawyer is not only alive, but hath been so thell 4000 years; and I hope God will indulge his life as many yet to come. He hath not indeed confin ed himself to one profession, one religion, or on country; but when the first mean selfish creatur appeared on the human stage, who made self th centre of the whole creation, would give himfel .

n ls

e,

air-

al,

00-

as

ons

em

ons

ays

nay

era

age-

ike

vith

to

uch

all

idu

Are

ch

nigh

seen.

thef

s life

nfin

on

atur

f th

mfel

n

no pain, incur no danger, advance no money to affift or preserve his fellow creatures; then was our lawyer born; and whilst fuch a person as I have decribed exists on earth, so long shall he remain upon it. It is therefore doing him little honour, to imagine he endeavours to mimic fome little obscure fellow, because he happens to resemble him in one particular feature, or perhaps in his profession; whereas his appearance in the world is calculated for much more general and noble purpofes: not to expose one pitiful wretch to the small and contemptible circle of his acquaintance, but to hold the glass to thousands in their closets, that they may contemplate their deformity, and endeavour to reduce it, and thus, by fuffering private mortificaion, may avoid public shame. This places the boundary between, and distinguishes the fatirist from the libeller; for the former privately corrects he fault for the benefit of the person, like a paent; the latter publicly exposes the person himself, is an example to others, like an executioner.

There are besides little circumstances to be conidered: as the drapery of a picture, which, tho' athion varies at different times, the refemblance of he countenance is not by those means diminished. Thus, I believe, we may venture to fay, Mrs. Towrouse is coeval with our lawyer: and tho' perhaps, luring the changes which fo long an existence must have passed through, she may in her turn have stood chind the bar at an inn; I will not scruple to afirm, the hath likewise in the revolution of ages sat n a throne. In short, where extreme turbulency ftemper, avarice, and an infensibility of human nifery, with a degree of hypocrify, have united in female composition, Mrs. Tow-wouse was that roman: and where a good inclination, eclipfed by poverty of spirit and understanding, hath glimhered forth in a man, that man hath been no other

han her sneaking husband.

I shall

po

in

a

fc

cil

th

70

of

A

the

Th

to

nea

lifh

cor

cou

on an

any

I

who reft

cou

vail

bee, than

but

if h

read

V

I shall detain my reader no longer than to give him one caution more of an opposite kind: for a in most of our particular characters we mean not to lash individuals, but all of the like fort; fo in our general descriptions, we mean not universals, but would be understood with many exceptions: for instance, in our descriptions of high people, we cannot be intended to include fuch as, whilft they are an honour to their high rank, by a well guided condescension, make their superiority as easy as posfible to those whom Fortune hath chiefly placed below them. Of this number I could name a peer no less elevated by Nature than by Fortune, who, whilft he wears the nobleft enfigns of honour on his person, bears the truest stamp of dignity on his mind, adorned with greatness, enriched with knowledge, and embellished with genius. I have seen this man relieve with generofity, while he hath conversed with freedom, and be to the same person patron and a companion. I could name a commoner raifed higher above the multitude by superior talents, than is in the power of the prince to exalt him; whose behaviour to those he hath obliged is more amiable than the obligation itself, and who is fo great a master of affability, that if he could divest himself of an inherent greatness in his manner, would often make the lowest of his ac quaintance forget who was the master of that palace in which they are fo courteously entertained Thefe are pictures which must be, I believe, known I declare they are taken from the life, and not in tended to exceed it. By those high people, therefore whom I have described, I mean a set of wretches who, while they are a difgrace to their ancestors whose honours and fortunes they inherit, (or per haps a greater to their mother, for fuch degenera cy is scarce credible), have the insolence to treat those with difregard, who are at least equal to the founders of their own splendor. It is, I fancy, im poffibl

possible to conceive a spectacle more worthy of our indignation, than that of a fellow who is not only a blot in the escutcheon of a great family, but a scandal to the human species, maintaining a supercilious behaviour to men, who are an honour to their nature, and a disgrace to their fortune

And now, reader,, taking these hints along with you, you may, if you please, proceed to the sequel

of this our true hiftory.

n-

re

nofoe-

eer

no,

hi

W.

een

on

n a

om-

eri

e to

obli

and f he

n his

s ac-

ned

nwo

t in

fore

ches

per

nera

trea

o the

offibl

### CHAP. II.

Anight scene, wherein several wonderful Adventures besel Adams and his fellow travellers.

IT was so late when our travellers left the inn or ale-house, (for it might be called either), that they had not travelled many miles, before night overtook them, or met them, which you please. The reader must excuse me if I am not particular as to the way they took; for as we are now drawing near the seat of the Boobies, and as that is a tick-lish name, which malicious persons may apply according to their evil inclinations, to several worthy country Squires, a race of men whom we look upon as entirely inossensive, and for whom we have an adequate regard, we shall lend no affistance to any such malicious purposes.

Darkness had now overspread the hemisphere, when Fanny whispered Joseph, That she begged to rest herself a little; for that she was so tired, she could walk no farther. Joseph immediately prevailed with Parson Adams, who was as brisk as a bee, to stop. He had no sooner seated himself, than he lamented the loss of his dear Æschylus; but was a little comforted when reminded, that if he had it in his possession, he could not see to

read.

Vol. II. S The

The sky was so clouded, that not a star appeared. It was, indeed, according to Milton, darkness visible. This was a circumstance, however, very favourable to Joseph; for Fanny, not suspicious of being overseen by Adams, gave a loose to her passion, which she had never done before; and reclining her head on his bosom, threw her arm carelessly round him, and suffered him to lay his check close to her's. All this insused such happiness into Joseph, that he would not have changed his turf for the finest down in the finest palace in the universe.

Adams fat at some distance from the lovers, and being unwilling to disturb them, applied himself to meditation; in which he had not spent much time, before he discovered a light at some distance, that seemed approaching towards him, He immediately hailed it; but, to his forrow and surprise, it stopped for a moment, and then disappeared. He then called to Joseph, asking him, If he had not seen the light. Joseph answered, He had. "And did you" not mark how it vanished?" returned he; "tho" I am not asraid of ghosts, I do not absolutely disbelieve them."

He then entered into a meditation on those unfubstantial beings; which was soon interrupted by several voices, which he thought almost at his elbow, though, in fact, they were not so extremely near: however, he could distinctly hear them a gree on the murder of any one they met. And a little after heard one of them say, He had killed a dozen since that day fortnight.

Adams now fell on his knees, and committed himself to the care of Providence; and poor Fan ny, who likewise heard those terrible words, em braced Joseph so closely, that had not he, whose ears were also open, been apprehensive on her account, he would have thought no danger, which

threatene

th

CI

ha

fti

W

th

clo

WC

ine

pre

da

dea

alo

1

the

" t

to r

hal

fro

Thi

and

of t

if t

no i

cry afte

men

adv:

feph

they

con

enec

ing 1

threatened only himfelf, too dear a price for fuch

embraces.

0

1

to

at ly

pen he

ou 10'

ely

un-

by

el

nely

n a-

id t

ed !

itte

Fan

em

hol

r ac

hic

tene

Joseph now drew forth his penknife, and Adams having finished his ejaculations, grasped his crabitick, his only weapon, and coming up to Joseph, would have had him quit Fanny, and place her in the rear; but his advice was fruitless, she clung closer to him, not at all regarding the presence of Adams, and, in a soothing voice declared, She would die in his arms. Joseph clasping her with inexpressible eagerness, whispered her, That he preferred death in her's to life out of them. Adams brandishing his crabitick, said, He despised death as much as any man, and then repeated aloud,

Est hic, est animus contemptor et illum, Qui vita bene credat emi quo tendis, honorem.

Upon this the voices ceased for a moment, and then one of them called out, "D-n you, who is "there?" To which Adams was prudent enough to make no reply; and of a fudden he observed half a dozen lights, which feemed to rife all at once from the ground, and advance brifkly towards him. This he immediately concluded to be an apparition, and now beginning to conceive that the voices were of the fame kind, he called out, " In the name of "the Lord, what would'st thou have?" He had no fooner spoke, than he heard one of the voices cry out, "D-n them, here they come;" and foon after heard feveral hearty blows, as if a number of men had been engaged at quarter-staff. He was just advancing towards the place of combat, when Jofeph catching him by the skirts, begged him that they might take the opportunity of the dark to convey away Fanny from the danger which threatened her. He prefently complied, and Joseph lifting up Fanny, they all three made the best of their

S 2

way; and without looking behind them, or being overtaken, they had travelled full two miles, poor Fanny not once complaining of being tired, when they faw far off feveral lights fcattered at a fmall distance from each other, and at the same time found themselves on the descent of a very steep hill. Adams's foot flipping he instantly disappear. ed, which greatly frighted both Joseph and Fanny; indeed, if the light had permitted them to fee it, they would fcarce have refrained laughing to fee the parfon rolling down the hill, which he did from top to bottom, without receiving any harm, He then halloowed as loud as he could, to inform them of his fafety, and relieve them from the fears which they had conceived for him. Jofeph and Fanny halted fome time, confidering what to do; at last they advanced a few paces, where the declivity feemed least steep; and then Joseph, taking his Fanny in his arms, walked firmly down the hill, without making a false step, and at length landed her at the bottom, where Adams foon came to them.

Learn hence, my fair countrywomen, to consider your own weakness, and the many occasions on which the strength of a man may be useful to you; and duly weighing this, take care that you match not yourselves with the spindle-shanked beaus and petit maîtres of the age, who, instead of being able, like Joseph Andrews, to carry you in lusty arms through the rugged ways and downhill steeps of life, will rather want to support their feeble limbs with your strength and affistance.

Our travellers now moved forwards, where the nearest light presented itself, and having crossed a common field, they came to a meadow, where they seemed to be at a very little distance from the light when, to their grief, they arrived at the banks of river. Adams here made a full stop, and declared he could swim, but doubted how it was possible to

gq

get wal

foot

of l

" (

16 1

bein

cam

hou

doo

hard

moi

ing

pear

had

with

to h

herf

the

her

preh

pref

very

were

very

table

in fo

dow

man

any

than

to hi

chos

to fi

told

ed h

he r

he 11

ed, 1

Mere

get Fanny over; to which Joseph answered, If they walked along its banks, they might be certain of foon finding a bridge, especially as, by the number of lights, they might be affured a parith was near. " Odfo, that's true indeed," faid Adams, I did not "think of that." Accordingly Joseph's advice being taken they passed over two meadows, and came to a little orchard, which led them to a house. Fanny begged of Joseph to knock at the door, affuring him the was fo weary that the could hardly stand on her feet. Adams, who was foremost, performed this ceremony, and the door being immediately opened, a plain kind of man appeared at it. Adams acquainted him, That they had a young woman with them, who was fo tired with her journey, that he should be much obliged to him if he would fuffer her to come in and reft The man, who faw Fanny by the light of the candle which he held in his hand, perceiving her innocent and modest look, and having no apprehensions from the civil behaviour of Adams, presently answered, That the young woman was very welcome to rest herself in his house, and so were her company. He then ushered them into a very decent room, where his wife was fitting at a table; fhe immediately rose up, and affisted them in fetting forth chairs, and defired them to fit down, which they had no fooner done, than the man of the house asked them, If they would have any think to refresh themselves with? Adams thanked him, and answered, He would be obliged to him for a cup of his ale, which was likewife thosen by Joseph and Fanny. Whilst he was gone to fill a very large jug with this liquor, his wife told Fanny the feemed greatly fatigued, and defird her to take fomething stronger than ale; but he refused, with many thanks, saying. It was true he was very much tired, but a little rest, she hopd, would restore her. As soon as the company were all feated, Mr. Adams, who had filled him-S 3 felf

n e

.

it

C

1,

n

h

ne

er

on

to

ou

ed

of

in

nill

eir

he

da

hey

ht

f

rec

e ti

ge

fw

60

6.

46

46

Joi

def

66 (

66

"

44

66 1

66 }

faic

ii t

" c

" t

the

kne

to p

Ad

than

afke

" g

" I

" 1

" n

" h

11

" a

" n

u d

felf with the ale, and, by public permission, had lighted his pipe, turned to the mafter of the house, asking him, If evil spirits did not use to walk in that neighbourhood? To which, receiving no anfwer, he began to inform him of the adventure which they had met with on the Downs; nor had he proceeded far in his story, when somebody knocked very hard at the door, The company expressed some amazement, and Fanny and the good woman turned pale; her husband went forth, and whilst he was absent, which was some time they all remained filent, looking at one another, and heard feveral voices discoursing pretty loudly. Adams was fully perfuaded that spirits were abroad, and began to meditate some exorcisms: Joseph was little inclined to the same opininion; Fanny was some more afraid of men; and the good woman herself began to suspect her guests, and imagined those without were rogues belonging to their gang, Atlength the master of the house returned, and laughing, told Adams he had discovered his apparition; that the murderers were sheep-stealers, and the twelve persons murdered, were no other than twelve theep. Adding that the shepherds had got the better of them, had fecured two, and were proceeding with them to a justice of peace This account greatly relieved the fears of the whole company; but Adams muttered to himself, he was convinced of the truth of apparitions for all that.

They now fat cheerfully round the fire, till the master of the house, having surveyed his guests, and conceiving that the cassock, which having fallen down appeared under Adams's great coat, and the shabby livery on Joseph Andrews, did not well suit with the familiarity between them, began to entertain some suspicions not much to their advantage: addressing himself therefore to Adams, he said. He was a clergyman by his dress, and supposed that honest man was his footman. "Sir," an swere

d

11

d

13

to

n-

re

an h-

th

ıg,

nat lve

lve

the

10-

ac.

on-

the

cits,

allen

1 the

fuit

nter

age:

faid.

pofee

vered

swered Adams,, I am a clergyman at your service : " but, as to that young man, whom you have " rightly termed honest, he is at present in no-" body's fervice; he never lived in any other fami-" ly than that of Lady Booby, from whence he " was discharged, I affure you, for no crime." Joseph faid, He did not wonder the gentleman was furprifed to fee one of Mr. Adams's character condescend to so much goodness with a poor man. "Child," faid Adams, " I should be ashamed of " my cloth, if I thought a poor man, who is ho-" neft, below my notice or my familiarity. I "know not how those who think otherwise, can " profess themselves followers and servants of him " who made no distinction, unless, peradventure, "by preferring the poor to the rich" "Sir," faid he, addressing himself to the gentleman, " thefe two poor young people are my parishion-"ers, and I look on them and love them as my "children There is fomething fingular enough in " their history, but I have not now time to recount "it." The mafter of the house, notwithstanding the fimplicity which discovered itself in Adams, knew too much of the world to give a hafty belief to professions. He was not yet quite certain that Adams had any more of the clergyman in him than his caffock. To try him therefore further, he asked him, " if Mr. Pope had lately published any "new thing?" Adams answered, "he had heard " great commendations of that poet, but that he "had never read nor knew any of his works." "Ho! ho!" fays the gentleman to himfelf, " have "I caught you?" "What," faid he, have you " never feen his Homer?" Adams answered, He " had never read any translation of the classics. "Why, truly," replied the gentleman, "there is " a dignity in the Greek language, which I think "no modern tongue can reach." "Do you un-" derstand Greek, Sir ? " faid Adams haftily,

"

46

11 (

66 1

a 1

11 e

16 II

es fi

a a

a a

11 0

" Fi

" CI

u le

16 A

a ra

" D

" th

th th

u til

" CT

no

ne

2 (

pa

he

rea

fu

ne

rei

Ai

me

of

in

" A little, Sir," answered the gentleman. "Do "you know, Sir, (cried Adams) where I can buy an Æschylus? an unlucky misfortune lately hap. "pened to mine." Æschylus was beyond the gentleman, though he knew him very well by name; he, therefore, returning back to Homer, asked Adams, What part of the Iliad he thought most excellent? Adams returned, His question would be properer, what kind of beauty was the chief in poetry; for that Homer was equally excellent in them all.

" And indeed, (contiuned he), what Cicero fars of a complete orator, may well be applied to a " great poet : He ought to comprehend all perfections. " Homer did this in the most excellent degree: it " is not without reason, therefore, that the philoof pher, in the 22d chapter of his poetics, mentions " him by no other appellation than that of The " Poet. He was the father of the drama, as well " as the epic: not of tragedy only, but of comedy ". alfo: for his Margites, which is deplorably loft, " bore, fays Aristotle, the same analogy to come-" dy, at his Odyssey and Iliad to tragedy. To him, " therefore, we owe Aristophanes, as well as Eu-" ripides, Sophocles, and my poor Æfthylus. " But if you please, we will confine ourselves at " least for the present) to the Iliad, his noblest " work; though neither Aristotle nor Horace give " it the preference, as I remember, to the Odyffey. " First, then, as to his subject, can any thing he " more fimple, and, at the fame time, more noble! " He is rightly praifed by the first of those judici-" ous critics, for not chufing the whole war, which " though he fays it hath a complete beginning and " end, would have been too great for the under " standing to comprehend at one view. I have " therefore often wondered why fo correct a wri " ter as Horace should, in his epistle to Lollius " call him the Trojani belli scriptorem. Secondly es his

.

c

n

n

27

3

it

0-

ns

The

cll

dy

oft,

ne-

im,

Eu-

us.

(at

left

give Hey.

ble?

dici

ich.

and

der

have

wri

llius

ndly

6 his

" his action, termed by Aristotle, Pragmaton Systa-" fis; is it possible for the mind of man to conceive "an idea of fuch perfect unity, and at the fame " time fo replete with greatness? And here I must " observe, what I do not remember to have feen " noted by any, the Harmorton, that agreement of " his action to his fubject; for as the subject is an-" ger, how agreeable is his action, which is war? " from which every incident arites, and to which " every episode immediately relates. Thirdly, his " manners, which Aristotle places second in h s de-" scription of the several parts of tragedy, and " which he fays are included in the action; I am "at a lofs whether I should rather ad ire the ex-" actness of his judgement in the nice diffinction, " or the immensity of his imagination in their va-"riety. For, as to the former of these, how ac-" curately is the fedate injured refentment of Achil-" les diftinguished from the hot insulting passion of " Agamemnon? How widely doth the brutal cou-" rage of Ajax differ from the amiable bravery of "Diomedes; and the wifdom of Nestor, which is " the refult of long reflection and experience, from the cunning of Ulysses, the effect of art and sub-" tilty only? If we confider their variety, we may "cry out with Aristotle, in his 24th chapter, that "no part of this divine poem is destitute of manners, Indeed I might affirm, that there is scarce a character in human nature untouched in some part or other, And as there is no passion which he is not able to describe, so is there none in his reader which he cannot raise. If he hath any fuperior excellence to the rest, I have been inclined to fancy it in the pathetic. I am fure I never read with dry eyes the two episodes where Andromache is introduced, in the former lamenting the danger, and in the latter the death of Hector. The images are fo extremely tender, in these, that I am convinced the poet had the " worthieft

" worthiest and best heart imaginable. Nor can I " help observing how Sophocles falls short of the " beauties of the original, in that imitation of the " diffuative speech of Andromache, which he hath " put in the mouth of Tecmessa; and yet Sopho-" cles was the greatest genius who ever wrote trae gedy, nor have any of his fuccessors in that art, " that is to fay, neither Euripides nor Seneca the " tragedian, been able to some near him. As to " his fentiments and diction, I need fay nothing " the former are particularly remarkable for the " utmost perfection on that head, namely, propriety; and as to the latter, Aristotle, whom doubtless you have read over and over, is ven " diffuse. I shall mention but one thing more " which that great critic, in his division of trage " dy, called Opfis, or the scenery, and which is a " proper to the epic as to the drama, with this diff " ference, that in the former it falls to the share of " the poet, and in the latter to that of the painter " But did ever painter imagine a scene like that i " the 13th and and 14th Iliad? where the reade " fees at one view the prospect of Troy, with th " army drawn up before it; the Grecian arm " camp, and fleet; Jupiter sitting on Mount ld " with his head wrapt in a cloud, and a thus " bolt in his hand, looking towards Thrace; No " tune driving through the fea, which divides o " each fide to permit his paffage, and then feating " himself on Mount Samos; the heavens opened " and the deities all feated on their thrones. The " is fublime! this is poetry!" Adams then ra out a hundred Greek verses, and with such a void emphasis, and action, that he almost frightened the women; and as for the gentleman, he was so t from entertaining any farther fuspicion of Adam that he now doubted whether he had not a billed in his house. He ran into the most extravaga encomiums on his learning; and the goodness

ney pini he

his

faid

but, wou might a

of a not his a Fant

itat tery he l

ove ong he g

y in y Pa

hat he fi

wn er c ofep ot t

oun rord rodi quo

Thulner ave

ctio

he

he

ath

104

ra-

irt.

the

10

ng

the

ro

on

er

ore

age

is a

dif

e o

nter

at i

ade

th

rm

Id

hun

Nep

es o

atin

enec

Th

ra

void

d th

o t

dam

ithe

agai

ess

his heart began to dilate to all the strangers. He faid he had great compassion for the poor young woman, who looked pale and faint with her journey; and in truth he conceived a much higher opinion of her quality than it deserved. He faid, he was forry he could not accommodate them all : but, if they were contented with his fire-fide, he would fit up with the men; and the young woman night, if the pleased, partake his wife's bed, which he advised her to; for that they must walk upwards of a mile to any house of entertainment, and that not very good neither. Adams, who liked his feat is ale, his tobacco, and his company, perfuaded Fanny to accept this kind proposal, in which soliitation he was feconded by Joseph. Nor was she ery difficultly prevailed on; for the had flept little he last night, and not at all the preceding; so that ove itself was scarce able to keep her eyes open any onger. The offer being therefore kindly accepted, he good woman produced every thing eatable in her house on the table, and the guests being heartiy invited, as heartily regaled themselves, especial-Parson Adams. As to the other two, they were xamples of the truth of that physical observation, hat love, like other fweet things, is no whetter of he stomach.

Supper was no sooner ended, than Fanny, at her wn request, retired, and the good woman bore er company. The man of the house, Adams, and ofeph, who would modestly have withdrawn, had not the gentleman insisted on the contrary, drew ound the fire-side, where Adams (to use his own sords) replenished his pipe, and the gentleman roduced a bottle of excellent beer, being the best quor in his house.

The modest behaviour of Joseph, with the graceulness of his person, the character which Adams are of him, and the friendship he seemed to enertain for him, began to work on the gentleman's afthions, and raised in him a curiosity to know the singularity

1

an

as

bly

wh

He

int

of

ful

gui

int

the

tru

nat

cer

fuc

ter

dar

Th

and

dea

imp

my

qua

life

for

atte

ner

kin

cate

rou

fingularity which Adams had mentioned in his hiftory. This curiofity Adams was no fooner inform. ed of, than, with Joseph's consent, he agreed to gratify it, and accordingly related all he knew, with as much tenderness as was possible for the character of Lady Booby; and concluded with the long, faithful, and mutual paffion between him and Fanny, not concealing the meanness of her birth and educa. These latter circumstances entirely cured a jealoufy which had lately rifen in the gentleman's mind, that Fanny was the daughter of some person of fashion, and that Joseph had run away with her. and Adams was concerned in the plot. He was now enamoured of his guests, drank their healths with great chearfulness, and returned many thanks to Adams, who had fpent much breath; for he was a circumstantial teller of a story.

Adams told him it was now in his power to return that favour; for his extraordinary goodness, as well as that fund of literature he was master of, which he did not expect to find under such a roof, had raised in him more curiosity than he had ever known. Therefore, said he, if it be not too trou-

fome, Sir, your history, if you please.

The gentleman answered, he could not refuse him what he had so much right to insist on; and after some of the common apologies, which are the usual preface to a story, he thus began.

The author hath by some been represented to have made a blunder here: for Adams had indeed shewn some learning, (say they), perhaps all the author had: but the gentleman hath shewn none, unless his approbation of Mr. A sams be such: but surely it would be preposte out in him to call it so. I have, however, notwichstanding this criticism, which I am told came from the mouth of a great orator in a public cossee house, lest this blunder as it stood in the such dition. I will not have the vanity to apply to any thing in this weak the observation which M. Dacier makes in her preface to her Ansstophanes: "Ie tiens pour une maxime constante, qu'une beaute mediocre plait plus generalement qu'une beauté sans defaut." Mr Congreve hath made such another blunder in his Love for Lore where Tattle tells Miss P ue, She would admire him as much for the beauty he commends in her, as if he himself was possessed it.

### CHAP. III.

In which the gentleman relates the history of his life.

CIR, I am descended of a good family, and was D born a gentleman. My education was liberal, and at a public school, in which I proceed d so far as to become master of the Latin, and to be tolerably verfed in the Greek language. My father died when I was fixteen, and left me mafter of myfelf. He bequeathed me a moderate fortune, which he intended I should not receive till I attained the age of twenty-five; for he constantly afferted, that was full early enough to give up any man entirely to the guidance of his own difcretion. However, as this intention was fo obscurely worded in his will, that the lawyers advised me to contest the point with my trustees; I own I paid so little regard to the inclinations of my dead father, which were fufficiently certain to me, that I followed their advice, and foon fucceeded; for the trustees did not contest the matter very obstinately on their side. "Sir, (faid Adams), may I crave the favour of your name?," The gentleman answered, His name was Wilson, and then proceeded.

to

6-

fs,

er

u-

ule

nd

the

luney), un-

pre

oraa c werk Ari

M

or th

\ H

I stayed a very little while at school after his death; for being a forward youth, I was extremely impatient to be in the world; for which I thought my parts, knowledge, and manhood thoroughly qualified me. And to this early introduction into life, without a guide, I impute all my future misfortunes; for besides the obvious mischiefs which attend this, there is one which hath not been so generally observed. The first impression which mankind receives of you will be very difficult to eradicate. How unhappy, therefore, must it be to six your character in life, before you can possibly know You. II.

its value, or weigh the consequences of those actions which are to establish your future reputation?

A little under seventeen I left my school, and went to London, with no more than fix pounds in my pocket. A great fum as I then conceived, and which I was afterwards furprifed to find fo foon confumed.

The character I was ambitious of attaining was that of a fine gentleman, the first requisites to which I apprehended were to be supplied by a tailor, a periwig-maker, and fome few more tradefmen, who deal in furnithing out the human body. Notwithstanding the lowness of my purse, I found credit with them more easily than I expected, and was foon equipped to my wish. This, I own, then agreeably furprised me; but I have since learned, that it is a maxim among many tradefinen at the polite end of the town, to deal as largely as they can, reckon as high as they can, and arrest as soon as they can.

The next qualifications, namely dancing, fencing, riding the great horse, and music, came into my head: but as they required expence and time, I comforted myfelf, with regard to dancing, that I had learned a little in my youth, and could walk a mimuet genteely enough; as to fencing, I thought my good humour would preferve me from the danger of a quarrel; as to the horse, I hoped it would not be thought of; and for music, I imagined I could eafily acquire the reputation of it; for I had heard fome of my school-fellows pretend to knowledge in operas, without being able to fing or play

on the fiddle.

Knowledge of the town feemed another ingredient; this I thought I should arrive at by frequenting public places. Accordingly I paid constant attendance to them all; by which means I was foon master of the fashionable phrases, learned to cry up the fashionable diversions, and knew the names and faces of the most fathionable men and women.

Nothing

W

th

th

th

fo

011

bly

ha

rii

10

of

plo

tin

an

he

46

66

66

61

kif

Nothing now feemed to remain but an intrigue, which I was refolved to have immediately: I mean the reputation of it; and indeed I was so successful, that in a very short time I had half a dozen with the finest women in town,

At these words Adams fetched a deep groan, and then, bleffing himself, cried out, "Good Lord!

" what wicked times are thefe?"

Not so wicked as you imagine, continued the gentleman; for I assure you they were all vestal virgins for any thing which I knew to the contrary. The reputation of intriguing with them was all I sought, and was what I arrived at: and perhaps I only slattered myself even in that: for very probably the persons to whom I shewed their billets, knew as well as I that they were counterfeits, and that I had written them to myself.

"Write letters to yourfelf!" faid Adams, fta-

ring.

d

n

d

n

15

h

0

1.

it

n

1

10

15

d

1.

11

1.

d

d

V-

y

1.

n

es

1.

O Sir, answered the gentleman, It is the very erfor of the times. Half our modern plays have one of these characters in them. It is incredible the pains I have taken, and the abfurd methods I employed to traduce the character of women of diftinction. When another had spoken in raptures of any one, I have answered, "D-n her, she! We " shall have her at H -- d's very soon." When he hath replied, He thought her virtuous, I have answered, "Ay, thou wilt always think a woman " virtuous, till she is in the streets; but you and I, " Jack or Tom, (turning to another in company), "know better." At which I have drawn a paper " out of my pocket, perhaps a tailor's bill, and kissed it, crying, at the same time, "By gad I was " once fond of her."

"Proceed, if you please, but do not swear any

" more," faid Adams.

Sir, faid the gentleman, I ask your pardon. Well, Sir, in this course of life I continued full

defi

will

Ad

I ha

the

St.

cha

the

give

mif

tru

ful

in a

firf

ab

out

mu

def

fior

the

tho

but

me

WO

dei

we

Ic

tiv

ha

th

W

ha

pr

three years.—"What course of life? (answered "Adams) I do not remember you have mention." ed any."—Your remark is just, said the gentleman, smiling, I should rather have said, in this course of doing nothing. I remember, some time afterwards, I wrote the journal of one day, which would serve, I believe as well for any other, during the whole time. I will endeavour to repeat it to you.

In the morning I arose, took my great stick, and walked out in my green frock with my hair in papers, (a groan from Adams), and sauntered about

till ten.

Went to the auction; told Lady — she had a dirty face; laughed heartily at something Captain — said; I can't remember what; for I did not very well hear it; whispered Lord —; bowed to the Duke of —; and was going to bid for a snuff-box; but did not, for fear I should have had it.

From 2 to 4, dreffed myfelf. A groan.
4 to 6, dined. A groan.
6 to 8, Coffee-house.
8 to 9, Drury-Lane playhouse.
9 to 10, Lincoln's Inn Fields,
10 to 12, Drawing-room.
A great groan.

At all which places nothing happened worth remark. At which Adams faid, with some vehemence, "Sir, this is below the life of an animal, hardly above vegetation; and I am surprised what could lead a man of your sense into it." What leads us into more follies than you imagine, Doctor, answered the gentleman, vanity: for as contemptible a creature as I was, and I assure you, yourself cannot have more contempt for such a wretch than I now have, I then admired myself, and should have despised

cd

n-

le.

his

ne

ch

u.

it

nd

01-

ut

la

un

ot

ed

a

1.0

.9.

e,

lly

ld

us

n.

le

n.

I

ve

ed

despised a person of your present appearance (you will pardon me), with all your learning, and those excellent qualities which I have remarked in you. Adams bowed, and begged him to proceed. After I had continued two years in this course of life, faid the gentleman, an accident happened which obliged me to change the scene. As I was one day at St. James's coffeehouse, making very free with the character of a young lady of quality, an officer of the guards, who was present, thought proper to give me the lie. I answered, I might possibly be mistaken; but I intended to tell no more than the truth. To which he made no reply, but a fcornful fneer. After this, I observed a strange coldness in all my acquaintance; none of them spoke to me first, and very few returned me even the civility of abow. The company I used to dine with left me out, and, within a weck, I found myself in as much solitude at St. James's, as if I had been in a defert. An honest eldery man, with a great hat and long fword, at last told me, He had a compasfion for my youth, and therefore advised me to thew the world I was not fuch a rafcal as they thought me to be. I did not at first understand him; but he explained himself, and ending with telling me, if I would write a challenge to the captain, he would, out of pure charity, go to him with it. " A " very charitable person truly!" cried Adams. I defired till the next day, continued the gentleman, to confider on it; and, retiring to my lodgings, I weighed the consequences on both fides as fairly as I could. On the one, I faw the risk of this alternative, either losing my own life, or having on my hands the blood of a man with whom I was not in the least angry. I soon determined, that the good which appeared on the other, was not worth this hazard. I therefore refolved to quit the scene, and presently retired to the Temple, where I took chambers. Here I foon got a fresh set of acquaintance, T 3

who knew nothing of what had happened to me. Indeed they were not greatly to my approbation; for the beaus of the Temple are only the shadows of the others. They are the affectation of affecta. tion. The vanity of these is still more ridiculous, if possible, than of the others. Here I met with fmart fellows, who drank with Lords they did not know, and intrigued with women they never faw, Covent-Garden was now the farthest stretch of my ambition, where I shone forth in the balconies at the playhouses, visited whores, made love to orange. wenches, and damned plays. This career was foom put a stop to by my furgeon, who convinced me of the necessity of confining myself to my room for a month. At the end of which, having had leifure to reflect, I resolved to quit all further conversation with beaus and fmarts of every kind, and to avoid, if possible, any occasion of returning to this place of confinement. "I think, (faid Adams) the " advice of a month's retirement and reflection was " very proper; but I should rather have expessed " it from a divine than a furgeon." The gentleman fmiled at Adams's fimplicity, and without explaining himself farther on such an odious subject, went on thus: I was no fooner perfectly restored to health, than I found my passion for women, which I was afraid to fatisfy as I had done, made me very unealy; I determined therefore to keep a mistress. Nor was I long before I fixed my choice on a young woman who had before been kept by two gentlemen, and to whom I was recommended by a celebrated bawd. I took her home to my chambers, and made her a fettlement during cohabitation. This would perhaps have been very ill paid; however, she did not fuffer me to be perplexed on that account; for before quarter-day, I found her at my chambers in too familiar conversation with a young fellow who was dressed like an officer, but was indeed a cityapprentice. Instead of excusing her inconstancy

to the and keep ratio fon to a fect do p

the r

her f

girl,
ving
camplicute
this

what work This folici cumi

had

trade mate ever, low

long with moti word the n

You ry the cient dy de ra

this there

.

h,

ot

۲.

y

at

e-

m

of a

re

d•

115

he

ed

in-

ent

th,

fy;

was

nan and

wd.

er a

not be-

s in

who

ity

acy.

the rapped out half a dozen of oaths, and, fnapping her fingers at me, fwore she scorned to confine herself to the best man in England. Upon this we parted, and the fame bawd prefently provided her another keeper. I was not fo much concerned at our separation, as I found, within a day or two, I had reafon to be for our meeting: for I was obliged to pay a second visit to my surgeon. I was now forced to do penance for fome weeks, during which time I contracted an acquaintance with a beautiful young girl, the daughter of a gentleman who, after having been forty years in the army, and in all the campaigns under the Duke of Marlborough, died a lieutenant on half-pay; and had left a widow with this only child, in very diffreffed circumstances : they had only a small pension from the government, with what little the daughter could add to it by her work; for the had great excellence at her needle. This girl was, at my first acquaintance with her, folicited in marriage by a young fellow in good circumstances. He was apprentice to a linen-draper, and had a little fortune fufficient to fet up his trade. The mother was greatly pleased with this match, as indeed the had fufficient reason. ever, I foon prevented it. I represented him in so low a light to his miftrefs, and made fo good an use of flattery, promises, and prefents, that, not to dwell longer on this subject than is necessary, I prevailed with the poor girl, and conveyed her away from her mother! In a word, I debauched her.—(At which words Adams started up, fetched three strides cross the room, and then replaced himself in his chair). You are not more affected with this part of my ftory than myfelf: I affure you, it will never be fuffitiently repented of in my opinion; but if you already detest it, how much more will your indignation be raised, when you hear the fatal consequences of this barbarous, this villainous action! If you please therefore, I will here defift.—" By no means, (cries

renge

uck

fter

een

or w

t the

nent

" as

roan

aken

olved

coul

reatu

roflig

rofti

ate.

hich

ontin

inut

had

hole

d, be

ty to

was

ut of

harge

Ino

ompla

enfate

ires i

erly

arlots

eir p

abited

mak

an g

ates a

Adams, " go on, I beseech you; and Heaven gran " you may fincerely repent of this, and many other " things you have related."-I was now, continued the gentleman, as happy as the possession of a fin young creature, who had a good education, and wa endued with many agreeable qualities, could make me. We lived fome months with vast fondness to gether without any company or conversation mon than we found in one another: but this could no continue always; and tho' I still preserved a great affection for her, I began more and more to wan the relief of other company, and confequently leave her by degrees, at last, whole days to herself She failed not to testify some uneafiness on those of casions, and complained of the melancholy life th led; to remedy which, I introduced her into the acquaintance of some other kept mistresses, with whom she used to play at cards, and frequent play and other diversions. She had not lived long i this intimacy, before I perceived a visible alteration in her behaviour; all her modesty and innocent vanished by degrees, till her mind became thorough ly tainted. She affected the company of rakes, gav herfelf all manner of airs was, never eafy but abroad or when she had a party at my chambers. She wa rapacious of money, extravagant to excess, loofei her conversation; and, if ever I demurred to any her demands, oaths, tears, and fits, were the imme diate consequences. As the first raptures of fond nefs were long fince over, this behaviour foon stranged my affections from her; I began to reflect with pleasure that she was not my wife, and to con ceive an intention of parting with her; of which having given her a hint, she took care to prevent the pains of turning her out of doors, and accord ingly departed herfelf, having first broke open m scrutoire, and taken with her all she could find, t the amount of about 200 l. In the first heat of m refentment, I resolved to pursue her with all the vengeand on no

ear an to

oc sh th

lay g i

no

gh

av

wa fe ii y o me

ond

no

flee

con

ich

t m

ord

m

th

and

rengeance of the law; but as she had the good uck to escape me during that ferment, my passion fterwards cooled; and having reflected that I had een the first aggressor, and had done her an injury, or which I could make her no reparation, by robing her of the innocence of her mind; and hearing, the fame time, that the poor old woman her moher had broke her heart on the daughter's elopebent from her, I, concluding myfelf her murderer, " as you very well might," cries Adams with a roan:) was pleased, that God Almighty had aken this method of punishing me, and reolved quietly to submit to the loss. could wish I had never heard more of the poor reature, who became in the end an abandoned rofligate; and, after being some years a common rostitute, at last ended her miserable life in Newate.—Here the gentleman fetched a deep figh, hich Mr Adams echoed very loudly; and both ontinued filent, looking on each other for fome inutes. At last the gentleman proceeded thus; had been perfectly constant to this girl during the hole time I kept her; but she had scarce departd, before I discovered more marks of her infidety to me than the loss of my money. In short, was forced to make a third vifit to my furgeon, ut of whose hands I did not get a hasty disharge.

I now foreswore all future dealings with the sex, omplained loudly that the pleasure did not commiste the pain, and railed at the beautiful creaters in as gross language as Juvenal himself forestly reviled them in. I looked on all the town arlots with a detestation not easy to be conceived; teir persons appeared to me as painted palaces, inabited by disease and death; nor could their beaumake them more desirable objects in my eyes, an gilding could make me covet a pill, or goldenates a costin. But though I was no longer the

absolute

Find

ct;

eavo

re in

e ca

the

hat

ould

e mo

notic

ccess

tular

e otl

p, fi

paff

ayed

me,

rft i

ima lo:

urfe

ugh!

mi

ecla

uch a

esent ulars

cou

firf after

ad f affre

the ner v

nt,

absolute flave, I found forme reasons to own myie still the subject of love. My hatred for women d creafed daily; and I am not positive but time mig have betrayed me again to some common harlot, he I not been fecured by a passion for the charmin Sapphira, which, having once entered upon, may a violent progress in my heart. Sapphira was wi to a man of fashion and gallantry, and one wi feemed, I own, every way worthy of her affection which, however, he had not the reputation of h ving. She was indeed a coquette achevée. " Pra " Sir, (fays Adams,) what is a coquette? I ha " met with the word in French authors, but a " ver could affign any idea to it. I believe it " the same with une sotte, Anglice, a fool." Si need answered the gentleman, perhaps you are not mu mistaken: but as it is a particular kind of folly, will endeavour to describe it. Were all creatur to be ranked in the order of creation, according their usefulness, I know few animals that wor not take place of a coquette; nor indeed hatht creature much pretence to any thing beyondi stinct; for though fometimes we might imagine was animated by the paffion of vanity, yet fart greater part of its actions fall beneath even that h motive; for instance, feveral absurd gestures a tricks, infinitely more foolish than what can be ferved in the most ridiculous birds and beasts, a which would perfuade the beholder that the f wretch was aiming at our contempt. Indeed its d racteristic is affectation, and this led and govern by whim only: for as beauty, wisdom, wit, go nature, politeness, and health, are sometimes fected by this creature; so are ugliness, folly, no fense, ill nature, ill-breeding and fickness, like put on by it in their turn. Its life is one confi lie; and the only rule by which you can form! judgement of them is, that they are never w they feem. If it was possible for a coquette to lo

ra

12

n

Si

nu

lly,

tur

ng

LOA

hd

ndi

ine

ar t

at l

es a

be o

he fi

ts ch

got

nes

y, no

ikew

rm a

to lo

sit is not, for if ever it attains this passion, the oquette ceases instantly), it would wear the face findifference, if not of hatred, to the beloved oba; you may therefore be affured, when they eneavour to perfuade you of their liking, that they e indifferent to you at leaft. And indeed this was e case of my Sapphira, who no sooner saw me the number of her admirers, than the gave me hat is commonly called encouragement; she ould often look at me, and when the perceived e meet her eyes, would instantly take them off, scovering at the same time as much surprise and notion as possible. These arts failed not of the ccess she intended; and as I grew more particutular to her than the rest of her admirers, she adnced, in proportion, more directly to me than to e others. She affected the low voice, whisper, p, figh, ftart, laugh, and many other indications passion, which daily deceive thousands. When I ayed at whift with her, fhe would look earneftly me, and at the fame time lose deal or revoke; then rst into a ridiculous laugh, and cry, "La! I can't imagine what I was thinking of." To detain you longer, after I had gone through a fufficient urfe of gallantry, as I thought, and was thoughly convinced I had raised a violent passion in mistress, I sought an opportunity of coming to eclairciffement with her. She avoided this as ich as possible; however, great assiduity at length esented me one. I will not describe all the parulars of this interview; let it fuffice, that, till could no longer pretend not to fee my drift, first affected a violent surprise, and, immediateafter, as violent a paffion: she wondered what ad feen in her conduct, which could induce me affront her in this manner; and, breaking from the first moment she could, told me, I had no her way to escape the consequence of her resentnt, than by never feeing, or at least speaking

wh

my

beli

exc

dea

der

fort

met

I

othe

into

who

mig

The

fing

fo-

our

were

were

mon

matt

way

to;

youn

only

whic

Thef

truth

the p

felves

This

bood

there he'pe

of rig

he u s mu

ne to

Vo

to her more. I was not contented with this an fwer; I still pursued her, but to no purpose, and was at length convinced that her hufband had the fole possession of her person, and that neither h nor any other had made any impression on he heart. I was taken off from following this igni fatuus by some advances which were made me b the wife of a citizen, who, tho' neither very youn nor handsome, was yet too agreeable to be rejected by my amorous conflitution. I accordingly foon fa tisfied her that she had not cast away her hints of a barren or cold foil: on the contrary, they in stantly produced her an eager and defiring lover Nor did she give me any reason to complain; th met the warmth she had raised, with equal ardour I had no longer a coquette to deal with, but on one who was wifer than to profittute the nobl passion of love to the ridiculous lust of vanity we prefently understood one another; and as the pleasures we fought lay in a mutual gratification we foon found and enjoyed them. I thought my felf at first greatly happy in the possession of this new mistress, whose fondness would have quickly furfeited a more fickly appetite; but it ha a different effect on mine; the carried my passio higher by it than youth or beauty had been able but my happiness could not long continue uninter rupted. The apprehensions we lay under from the jealoufy of her hufband, gave us great uneafined " Poor wretch! I pity him cried Adams." H did indeed deferve it, faid the gentleman; for h loved his wife with great tenderness; and I affur you it is a great fatisfaction to me, that I was no the man who first seduced her affections from his These apprehensions appeared also too well ground ed; for, in the end, he discovered us, and pre cured witnesses of our careffes. He then prof cuted me at law, and recovered 3000 l. damage o est which much diffressed my fortune to pay: an WP

what was worse, his wife being divorced, came upon my hands. I led a very uneasy life with her; for besides that my passion was now much abated, her excessive jealousy was very troublesome. At length death rid me of an inconvenience which the consideration of my having been the author of her misfortunes would never suffer me to take any other

method of discarding.

ni

fa or in

fh

ur

on

obl

th

ion

my

0

120

ha

lio

ble

nter n th

nel

H

rh

fur

no hin

unc

pro

age

an wh

I now bad adieu to love, and refolved to purfue other less dangerous and expensive plersures. I fell into the acquaintance of a fet of jolly companions, who flept all day, and drank all night? fellows who might rather be faid to confume time than to live. Their best conversation was nothing but noise; finging, hallooing, wrangling, drinking, toafting, h-wing, fmoaking, were the chief ingredients of our entertainment. And yet, bad as they were, they were more tolerable than our graver fcenes, which were either excessive tedious narratives of dull common matters of fact, or hot disputes about trifling matters, which commonly ended in a wager. This way of life the first serious reflection put a period to; and I became member of a club frequented by young men of great abilities. The bottle was now only called in to the affistance of our conversation, which rolled on the deepest points of philosophy. These gentlemen were engaged in a search after truth; in the pursuit of which, they threw aside all he prejudices of education, and governed themelves only by the infallible guide of human reason. This great guide, after having shewn them the falsehood of that very ancient but simple tenet, that here is fuch a being as a Deity in the universe, he'ped them to establish in his stead a certain rule f right, by adhering to which, they all arrived at he utmost purity of morals. Reslection made me me to despise and detest the former. I began now o esteem myself a being of a higher order than I VOL. II.

at I

ly 6

for

par

ma

mo

the

fail

rid

"

Fir

obf

is

ftre

of

the

to f

do

ed,

per

orn

and

thir

vill

van his

van

is r

it i

twe

am

mai

the

wh

der

had ever before conceived, and was the more charm. ed with this rule of right, as I really found in my own nature nothing repugnant to it. I held in ut. most contempt all persons who wanted any other inducement to virtue, besides her intrinsic beauty and excellence; and had fo high an opinion of my prefent companions, with regard to their morality, that I would have trusted them with whatever was nearest and dearest to me. Whilst I was engaged in this delightful dream, two or three accidents happened fuccessively, which at first much surprised me. For, one of our greatest philosophers, or rule of right. men, withdrew himself from us, taking with him the wife of one of his most intimate friends. Secondly, another of the fame fociety left the club without remembering to take leave of his bail. A third having borrowed a fum of money of me, for which ! received no fecurity, when I asked him to repay it, absolutely denied the loan. These several practices, to inconfistent with our golden rule, made me begin to suspect its infallibility; but when I communicated my thoughts to one of the club, he faid. There was nothing absolutely good or evil in itself; that actions were denominated good or bad by the circumstances of the agent. That possibly the man who ran away with his neighbour's wife, might be one of very good inclinations, but over-prevailed on by the violence of an unruly passion; and, in other particulars, might be a very worthy member of fociety: that if the beauty of any woman created in him an uneafiness, he had a right from Nature to relieve himself; with many other things, which then detefted fo much, that I took leave of the fociety that very evening, and never returned to it again. Being now reduced to a state of solitude which I did not like, I became a great frequenter of the playhouses, which indeed was always my favourite diversion, and most evenings passed away two or three hours behind the fcenes, where I me y

.

d

e.

at

r.

is

r,

he

y,

.9

12-

11

es,

in

13-

ere

nat

ir-

an

be

on

10-

in

to h I

oci-

ude

of fa-

vay

net

with feveral poets, with whom I made engagements at the taverns. Some of the players were likewise of our parties. At these meetings we were generally entertained by the poets with reading their performances, and by the players with repeating their parts: upon which occasions I observed the gentleman who furnished our entertainment was commonly the best pleased of the company; who, tho' they were pretty civil to him to his face, feldom failed to take the first opportunity of his absence to Now I made fome remarks, which ridicule him. probably are too obvious to be worth relating. "Sir, " (fays Adams), your remarks, if you pleafe." First, then, says he, I concluded that the general observation, that wits are most inclined to vanity, is not true. Men are equally vain of riches, frength, beauty, honours, &c.; but these appear of themselves to the eyes of the beholders, whereas the poor wit is obliged to produce his performance to shew you his perfection; and on his readiness to do this, that vulgar opinion, I have before mentioned, is grounded. But doth not the person who expends vast fums in the furniture of his house, or the ornaments of his person, who consumes much time, and employs great pains in dreffing himself, or who thinks himself paid for self-denial, labour, or even villainy, by a title or a ribbon, facrifice as much to vanity, as the poor wit, who is defirous to read you his poem or his play? My fecond remark was, that vanity is the worst of passions, and more apt to contaminate the mind than any other; for as felfishness is much more general than we please to allow it; so it is natural to hate and envy those who stand between us and the good we defire. Now, in lust and ambition these are few; and even in avarice we find many who are no obstacles to our pursuits: but the vain man feeks pre eminence; and every thing which is excellent or praise-worthy in another, renders him the marks of his antipathy. Adams now U 2 began -

fho

thei

nor

no I

that

well

ence

the !

ance

ing !

of q

lace

fathi

fend

bly f

Som

great by t

" A

man

for 1

men

the p

cour

fubsc

Row

ved 1

This

that

turec

many

what

tions

tax o

eafy :

know

what

to fo

began to fumble in his pockets, and foon cried out, "O la! I have it not about me."-Upon this, the gentleman asking him what he was searching for; he faid, He fearched after a fermon, which he thought his masterpiece against vanity. "Fy upon " it, fy upon it, (cries he), why do I ever leave " that fermon out of my pocket? I wish it was " within five miles; I would willingly fetch it, to " read it to you." The gentleman answered, That there was no need, for he was cured of the passion. " And for that very reason, (quoth Adams) 1 " would read it, for I am confident you would ad-" mire it : indeed I have never been a greater ene-" my to any paffion, than that filly one of vanity." The gentleman smiled, and proceeded .- From this fociety I eafily paffed to that of the gamesters, where nothing remarkable happened, but the finishing my fortune, which those gentlemen soon helped me to the end of. This opened scenes of life hithertounknown; poverty and diffrefs, with their horrid train of duns, attorneys, bailiffs, haunted me day and night. My clothes grew shabby, my credit bad, my friends and acquaintance of all kinds cold. In this fituation, the strangest thought imaginable came into my head; and what was this, but to write a play? for I had fufficient leifure; fear of bailiffs confined me every day to my room; and having always had a little inclination, and fomething of a genius that way, I fet myfelf to work, and within a few months, produced a piece of five acts, which was accepted of at the theatre. I remembered to have formerly taken tickets of other poets for their benefits, long before the appearance of their performances; and refolving to follow a precedent which was fo well fuited to my prefent circumstances, I immediately provided myself with a large number of little papers. Happy indeed would be the state of poetry, would these tickets pass current at the bakehouse, the alchouse, and the chandler's thop;

.

1

.

is

e

y

0

1.

n

d

y

15

10

a

ff's |

1

a

in

ch

to

eir

er-

nt

n.

ge

be

nt

r's

);

fhop; but alas ! far otherwise; no tailor will take them in payment for buckram, canvas, ftay-tape; nor no bailiff for civility-money. They are indeed no more than a passport to beg with, a certificate that the owner wants five shillings, which induces well-disposed Christians to charity. I now experienced what is worse than poverty, or rather what is the worst consequence of poverty, I mean attendance and dependence on the great. Many a morning have I waited hours in the cold parlours of men of quality, where, after feeing the lowest rascals in lace and embroidery, the pimps and buffoons in fathion admitted, I have been fometimes told, on fending in my name, that my Lord could not possibly fee me this morning; a fufficient affurance that I should never more get entrance into that house. Sometimes I have been at last admitted; and the great man hath thought proper to excuse himself. by telling me he was tied up. "Tied up, (fays " Adams), pray what's that?" Sir, fays the gentleman, the profit which bookfellers allowed authors for the best works, was so very small, that certain men of birth and fortune, some years ago, who were the patrons of wit and learning, thought fit to encourage them farther, by entering into voluntary subscriptions for their encouragement. Thus Prior, Rowe, Pope, and fome other men of genius, received large fums for their labours from the public. This feemed so easy a method of getting money, that many of the lowest scribblers of the times ventured to publish their works in the same way; and many had the affurance to take in subscriptions for what was not writ, nor ever intended. Subscriptions in this manner growing infinite, and a kind of tax on the public, some persons, finding it not so eafy a talk to differn good from bad authors, or to know what genius was worthy encouragement, and what was not, to prevent the expence of subscribing to fo many, invented a method to excuse themselves  $U_3$ from-

othe

fera

garr

writ

qual

Iref

tion.

had

Iap

bufir

me,

plays

ftage

from

hold

bufin

houf

roun

with

whet

nity i

out,

polite

diffat

in all

peopl

er pe

place the lo

merca

part c

this n

keep i

ng m

bool

my le

compa

ae wo

from all subscriptions whatever; and this was to receive a small sum of money in consideration of giving a larger one, if ever they subscribed; which many have done, and many more have pretended to have done, in order to filence all folicitation. The fame method was likwise taken with play. house tickets, which were no less a public grie. vance; and this is what they call being tied up from fubicribing. "I can't fay but the term is apte-" nough, and fomewhat typical, (faid Adams): " for a man of large fortune, who ties himfelf up, " as you call it, from the encouragement of men-" of merit, ought to be tied up in reality." Well, Sir, fays the gentleman, to return to my ftorv. Sometimes I have received a guinea from a man of quality, given with as ill a grace, as alms are generally to the meanest beggar, and purchased too with as much time spent in attendance as, if it had been spent in honest industry, might have brought me more profit with infinitely more fatisfaction. After about two months spent in this disagreeable way, with the utmost mortification, when I was pluming my hopes on the prospect of a plentiful harvest from my play, upon applying to the prompter toknow when it came into rehearfal, he informed me he had received orders from the managers to return. me the play again; for that they could not possibly act it that feafon, but if I would take it and revite it against the next, they would be glad to see it again. I fnatched it from him with great indignation, and retired to my room, where I threw myfelf on the bed in a fit of despair .- "You should rather " have thrown yourfelf on your knees, (fays A. " dams), for despair is finful." As soon. continued the gentleman, as I had indulged the first tumult of my passion, I began to consider coolly what course I should take, in a situation without friends, money, credit, or reputation of any kind. After revolving many things in my mind, I could fee no other

other possibility of furnishing myself with the miferable necessaries of life, than to retire to a garret near the temple, and commence hackneywriter to the lawyers; for which I was well qualified, being an excellent penman. This purpofe Irefolved on, and immediately put it in execution. I had an acquaintance with an attorney who had formerly transacted affairs for me, and to him I applied: but instead of furnishing me with any bufiness, he laughed at my undertaking, and told me, He was afraid I should turn his deeds into plays, and he should expect to see them on the fage. Not to tire you with instances of this kind from others, I found that Plato himself did not hold poets in greater abhorrence than these men of buiness do. Whenever I durst venture to a coffeehouse, which was on Sundays only, a whisper ran round the room, which was constantly attended with a fneer - That's Poet Wilfon: for I know not whether you have observed it, but there is a malignity in the nature of man, which, when not weeded out, or at least covered by a good education and politeness, delights in making another uneasy or diffatisfied with himself. This abundantly appears in all affemblies, except those which are filled by people of fashion, and especially among the younger people of both fexes, whose births and fortunes place them just without the polite circles; I mean he lower class of the gentry, and the higher of the mercantile world, who are, in reality, the worst bred part of mankind. Well, Sir, whilst I continued in his miserable state, with scarce sufficient business to keep me from starving, the reputation of a poet being my bane, I accidentally became acquainted with abookseller, who told me, It was a pity a man of my learning and genius should be obliged to such a method of getting his livlihood; that he had a compassion for me, and if I would engage with him, he would undertake to provide handsomely for me.

· .

h

n

e

y, .

g

ft

to

ne

rn.

ie

a-

elf

A-

ti-

tu-

ds,

ter

no her

ing

year

and

rous

affur

voui

my i

only

niw

out l

mon

ind

ity,

m

hi hi

a

W(

re

A

de de

fu

are

he g

lora

had

ut,

is co

nd i

(fa

300

ord

ot co

1. 1

nk n

ry i

pro

as a

rev

A man in my circumstances, as he very well knew, had no choice. I accordingly accepted his propofal, with his conditions, which were none of the most favourable, and fell to translating with all my I had no longer reason to lament the want of butiness; for he furnished me with so much, that in half a year I almost writ myself blind. I like. wife contracted a distemper by my sedentary life, in which no part of my body was exercised but my right arm, which rendered me incapable of writing for a long time. This unluckily happened to delay the publication of a work, and my last performance not having fold well, the bookfeller declined any further engagement, and afperfed me to his brethren as a careless idle fellow. I had, however, by having half worked and half starved myself to death, during the time I was in his fervice, faved a few guineas, with which I bought a lottery ticket, resolving to throw myself into Fortune's lap, and try if the would make me amends for the injuries the had done me at the gaming-table. This purchase being made left me almost pennyless; when, as if I had not been fufficiently miferable, a bailing in woman's clothes got admittance to my chamber, whither he was directed by the bookfeller. He arrested me at my tailor's suit for thirty-five pounds; a fum for which I could not procure bail, and was therefore conveyed to his house, where I was lock ed up in an upper-chamber. I had now neither health, (for I was scarce recovered from my indifposition), liberty, money, or friends; and had a bandoned all hopes, and even the defire of life. " But this could not last long, (said Adams): for "doubtless the tailor released you the moment he " was truly acquainted with your affairs, and knew " that your circumstances would not permit you to " pay him." Oh, Sir, answered the gentleman he knew that before he arrested me: nay, he knew that nothing but incapacity could prevent me pay

7,

10

19

nt

at

e.

in

ny

ng

ay

ny re-

by

10

da

et.

and

ries

uren.

iliff

oer,

ar-

ds:

Was

ck.

ther

dif

l a

life.

for

h

new

u to

nan,

nev

pay

ing

ing my debt; for I had been his customer many years, had fpent vaft fums of money with him, and had always paid most punctually in my prosperous days: but when I reminded him of this, with affurances that, if he would not molest my endeayours, I would pay him all the money I could by my utmost labour and industry procure, reserving only what was fufficient to preferve me alive, he niwered, His patience was worn out; that I had out him off from time to time; that he wanted the noney: that he had put it into a lawyer's hands; and if I did not pay him immediately, or find fecuity, I must ly in gaol, and expect no mercy. " He may expect mercy, (cries Adams, starting from his chair), where he will find none. How can fuch awretch repeat the Lord's prayer, where the word, which is translated, I know not for what reason, Trespasses, is in the original, Debts? And as furely as we do not forgive others their debts, when they are unable to pay them, fo furely shall we ourselves be unforgiven, when we are in no condition of paying" He ceased, and he gentleman proceeded. While I was in this delorable fituation, a former acquaintance, to whom had communicated my lottery-ticket, found me ut, and, making me a vifit, with great delight in scountenance, shook me heartily by the hand, nd wished me joy of my good fortune: "For, (says he), your ticket is come up a prize of 3000 l." Adams fnapt his fingers, at thefe ords, in an ecstasy of joy; which, however, did of continue long: for the gentleman thus proceed-I. Alas! Sir, this was only a trick of Fortune to nk me the deeper: for I had disposed of this lotry ticket two days before to a relation, who fused lending me a shilling without it, in order procure myself bread. As soon as my friend as acquainted with my unfortunate sale, he began revile me, and remind me of the ill conduct and. mif-.

dri

haj

inc

An

kn

gui

200

No le

um

he de

nd v

reati

ad a

kiffe

owi

ut n

liate!

ebts

ny po

enec

hicl

nean

n a

vithi

rith

ne

nind

nan ng o

n a

hink

in

A

w

Ch

miscarriages of my life. He faid I was one who Fortune could not fave, if the would; and that was now ruined without any hopes of retrieval, no must expect any pity from my friends; that it would be extreme weakness to compassionate the misson tunes of a man who ran headlong to his own de struction. He then painted to me, in as lively of lours as he was able, the happiness I should have now enjoyed, had I not foolifhly disposed of m ticket. I urged the plea of necessity; but he mad no answer to that, and began again to revile me, till could bear it no longer, and defired him to fini his vifit. I foon exchanged the bailiff's house for a prison; where, as I had not money sufficient procure me a separate apartment, I was crouded with a great number of miserable wretches, in con mon with whom I was destitute of every conven ence of life, even that which all the brutes enio wholesome air. In these dreadful circumstances applied by letter to feveral of my old acquaintance and fuch to whom I had formerly lent money with out any great prospect of its being returned for their affistance; but in vain. An excuse, it flead of a denial, was the gentlest answer I received - Whilft I languished in a condition too horrib to be described, and which, in a land of humanit and what is much more, Christianity, seems strange punishment for a little inadvertency and it discretion; whilst I was in this condition, a fello came into the prison, and inquiring me out, de vered me the following letter:

"SIR.

"MY father, to whom you fold your ticket the last lottery, died the same day in which it came up a prize, as you have possibly hear

" and left me fole heiress of all his fortune. 12" so much touched with your present circumstance

" and the uncasiness you must feel at having be

ad

till

nif

fo

nt t

di

on

en

ijo

ces

inc

vitl

neo , it

rib

nit

ms

d i

ello

del

set I

which

ear

Ia

ance

bee

drive

driven to dispose of what might have made you happy, that I must defire your acceptance of the inclosed, and am,

"Your humble fervant.
"HARRIET HEARTY."

And what do you think was inclosed? "I don't know," (cried Adams): " not less than a guinea, I hope."-Sir, it was a bank note for 2001 - "200 l. !" fays Adams in a rapture .lo less, I affure you, answered the gentleman; a m I was not half fo delighted with, as with edear name of the generous girl that fent it me; nd who was not only the best, but the handsomest reature in the universe; and for whom I had long ad a passion, which I never durst disclose to her. kiffed her name a thousand times, my eyes overowing with tenderness and gratitude, I repeatedlut not to detain you with these raptures, I immelately acquired my liberty, and, having paid all my ebts, departed, with upwards of fifty pounds in procket, to thank my kind deliver. She hapened to be then out of town, a circumstance hich, upon reflection, pleased me; for, by that leans, I had an opportunity to appear before her a more decent dress. At her return to town, ithin a day or two, I threw myself at her feet ith the most ardent acknowledgments, which he rejected with an unfeigned greatness of hind, and told me, I could not oblige her more han by never mentioning, or, if possible, thinkg on a circumstance which must bring to my mind accident that might be grievous to me to hink on. She proceeded thus: "What I have done is, in my own eyes, a trifle, and, perhaps, infinitely less than would have become me to do. And if you think of engaging in any bufiness, where a larger fum may be serviceable to you, I shall not be over-rigid, either as to the security

befor

was :

man I, " " to

a tic

" to

" gr

" m

u m

ii an

" no

se A

" be

" an

e tu

" I

" fo

me v

" tu

" to

" I

" tal

" pi

" ha

" an

w W

" au

" th

" in

CO

" m

ing,

" in

lo!

V

or interest." I endeavoured to express all the gratitude in my power to this profusion of good ness, though perhaps it was my enemy, and bega to afflict my mind with more agonies than all th miseries I had underwent; it affected me wit feverer reflections than poverty, diftress, and prisons united, had been able to make me feel for, Sir, these acts and professions of kindness which were fufficient to have raifed in a good heart the most violent passion of friendship to one of the fame, or to age and uglines in different fex, came to me from a woman, young and beautiful woman, one whose perfection I had long known, and for whom I had long con ceived a violent passion, tho' with a despair which made me endeavour rather to curb and conceal than to nourish or acquaint her with it. In short they came upon me united with beauty, formers and tenderness, such bewitching smiles --- O Mr Adams, in that moment I loft myfelf; and forget ting our different fituations, nor confidering wha return I was making to her goodness, by desiring her, who had given me fo much, to bestow her all I laid gently hold on her hand, and conveying it to my lips, I preffed it with inconceivable ardour then, lifting up my fwimming eyes, I faw her fac and neck overspread with one blush : she offered to withdraw her hand, yet not so as to deliver it from mine, though I held it with the gentlest force. W both stood trembling, her eyes cast on the ground and mine stedfastly fixed on her. Good God, wha was then the condition of my foul! burning with love, defire, admiration, gratitude, and every ten der passion, all bent on one charming object. Pal fion at last got the better of both reason and re spect; and, softly letting go her hand, I offered madly to clasp her in my arms: when, a little re covering herfelf, the started from me, asking ne wit

h d a h it

in el

ef.

100

,

on

on

ic

eal

ort

Mr get

rha ring

all

t te

ur

fac

d to

W

ind

vha

with ten

Paf

re

erec

re

wit

with some shew of anger, If she had any reason to expect this treatment from me. I then fell proftrate before her, and told her, If I had offended, my life was absolutely in her power, which I would in any manner lose for her fake. "Nay, Madam," faid , " you shall not be so ready to punish me, as I to suffer. I own my guilt. I detest the reflection that I would have facrificed your happiness " to mine. Believe me, I fincerely repent my in-" gratitude; yet, believe me too, it was my passion, " my unbounded paffion for you, which hurried " me fo far; I have loved you long and tenderly; " and the goodness you have shewn me, hath in-" nocently weighed down a wretch undone before. " Acquit me of all mean, mercenary views; and, " before I take my leave of you for ever, which I am refolved inftantly to do, believe me, that for-" tune could have raifed me to no height to which "I could not have gladly lifted you. O curfed be "fortune!"—" Do not," fays she, interrupting me with the sweetest voice, "Do not curse For-" tune, fince she hath made me happy; and if she "hath put your happiness in my power, I have " told you, you shall ask nothing in reason which "I will refuse." " Madam, (faid I), you mistake me, if you imagine, as you feem, my hap-" piness is in the power of Fortune now. You have obliged me too much already; if I have any wish, it is for some bleffed accident, by which I may contribute with my life to the least augmentation of your felicity. As for myself, " the only happiness I can ever have, will be hearing of yours; and if Fortune will make that "complete, I will forgive her all her wrongs to "me." "You may, indeed, answered she smilng, " for your own happiness must be included "in mine. I have long known your worth; nay, "I must consess," said she, blushing, "I have long discovered that passion for me you profess, VOL. II. " not-

wh

tho

1 fc

by

and

tan

me

new

had

are

kna

mer

fron

mer

pine

with

ly I

than

was

an c

a r

fons

read

fort

pour

chal

after

noif

quie

twer

our

for '

repr

Pref

one,

Ada

the s

of al

" notwithstanding those endeavours, which, I am convinced, were unaffected, to conceal it; and " all I can give, with reason, will not suffice, -take " reason away, -and now, I believe, you cannot affe me what I will deny."-She uttered thefe words with a fweetness not to be imagined. I immediately started; my blood, which lay freezing a my heart, rushed tumultuously through every vein I stood for a moment filent; then, flying to her, I caught her in my arms, no longer refifting,-and foftly told her, She must give me then herself. O Sir, - Can I describe her look? She remained for lent and almost motionless, several minutes, A laft, recovering herfelf a little, she infifted on m leaving her, and in fuch a manner, that I instant obeyed: you may imagine, however, I foon far her again. - But I alk pardon, I fear I have detain ed you too long in relating the particulars of the former interview. " So far otherwise," said A dams, licking his lips, " that I could willingly hear "it over again." Well, Sir, continued the gentle man, to be as concise as possible, within a week the confented to make me the happiest of man kind. We were married shortly after; and when came to examine the circumstances of my wife fortune, (which, I do affure you, I was not pro fently at leifure enough to do), I found it amounted to about fix thousand pounds, most part of which lay in effects; for her father had been a wine-men chant, and she seemed willing, if I liked it, that should carry on the same trade. I readily, and to inconsiderately, undertook it; for, not having been bred up to the fecrets of the business, and endeavouring to deal with the utmost honesty an uprightness, I soon found our fortune in a declining way, and my trade decreasing by little and little for my wines, which I never adulterated after the importation, and were fold as neat as they cam over, were univerfally decried by the vintners, t whor

m

at in

nd

fi A

m

ul

lan in

the

A

ear tle

cek

an

n l

re

tec

ic

er

ut

to

in

n

in

nei m

whom I could not allow them quite as cheap as those who gained double the profit by a less price. I foon began to despair of improving our fortune by these means : nor was I at all easy at the visits and familiarity of many who had been my acquaintance in my prosperity, but denied and shunned me in my adverfity, and now very forwardly renewed their acquaintance with me. In short, I had fufficiently feen that the pleafures of the world are chiefly folly, and the business of it mostly knavery; and both nothing better than vanity: the men of pleasure tearing one another to pieces, from the emulation of spending money, and the men of business, from envy in getting it. My happiness consisted entirely in my wife, whom I loved with an inexpressible fondness, which was perfectly returned; and my prospects were no other than to provide for our growing family; for she was now big of her fecond child: I therefore took an opportunity to ask her opinion of entering into a retired life, which, after hearing my reafins, and perceiving my affection for it, she readily embraced. We foon put our small fortune, now reduced under three thousand pounds, into money, with part of which we purchased this little place, whither we retired soon after her delivery, from a world full of buftle, noise, hatred, envy and ingratitude, to ease, quiet, and love. We have here lived almost twenty years, with little other conversation than our own, most of the neighbourhood taking us for very strange people; the Squire of the parish representing me as a madman, and the parson as a Presbyterian; because I will not hunt with the one, nor drink with the other. "Sir," fays Adams, " Fortune hath, I think, paid you all "her debts in this sweet retirement." Sir, replied the gentleman, I am thankful to the Great Author of all things for the bleflings I here enjoy. I have X 2 the

ce p

11 2

11 C

kno

mai

his

frui

rofe

ing

8211

and

ftol

dre

it h

whi

tim

bee

par

this

wai

wea

pla

had

of wh

rati

cer

gar

her

W

Ili

fair

the

T

the best of wives, and three pretty children, for whom I have the true tenderness of a parent. But no bleffings are pure in this world, Within three years of my arrival here, I lost my eldest fon, (Here he fighed bitterly). " Sir, (fays Adams), we must submit to Providence, and con-" fider death is common to all " We must submit, indeed, answered the gentleman; and if he had died, I could have borne the loss with pa. tience: but, alas! Sir, he was folen away from my door, by fome wicked travelling people whom they call Gipfies; nor could I ever, with the most diligent fearch, recover him. Poor child! he had the sweetest look, the exact picture of his mother; at which fome tears unwittingly dropt from his eyes, as did likewise from those of Adams, who always fympathifed with his friends on those occafions. Thus, Sir, faid the gentleman, I have finished my story, in which, if I have been too particular, I ask your pardon; and now, if you please, I will fetch you another bottle: which propofal the parson thankfully accepted.

## CHAP. IV.

A description of Mr. Wilson's way of living. The tragical adventure of the dog, and other grave matters.

Adams and he fat fome time filent, when the former started up, and cried, "No, that won't do." The gentleman enquired into his meaning; he answered, "He had been considering that it was possible the late famous King Theomy dore might have been that very son whom he had lost; but added, that his age could not answere that imagination." However," (says he), God disposes all things for the best, and very probably

" probably he may be some great man, or duke; and may, one day or other, revisit you in that "capacity." The gentleman answered, he should know him amongst ten thousand; for he had a mark on his left breast of a strawberry, which his mother had given him by longing for that fruit.

n,

ne

2.

m

m

oft

ad

Τ;

his

al-

a-

fi-

11-

ou

-01

ave

ind

nen

n't

an-

ing

e0.

he

an-

ery

bly

That beautiful young lady, the Morning, now rose from her bed, and with a countenance blooming with fresh youth and sprightliness, like Miss -\*, with foft dews hanging on her pouting lips, began to take her early walk over the eaftern hills; and prefently after, that gallant person the Sun ftole foftly from his wife's chamber to pay his addreffes to her; when the gentleman asked his guest if he would walk forth and furvey his little garden, which he readily agreed to, and Joseph, at the same time awaking from a fleep in which he had been two hours buried, went with them. No. parterres, no fountains, no statues embellished this little garden. Its only ornament was a short walk, fliaded on each fide by a filbert-hedge, with a small alcove at one end, whither in hot weather the gentleman and his wife used to retire and divert themselves with their children, who played in the walk before them. But though vanity had no votary in this little spot, here was variety of fruits, and every thing uleful for the kitchen. which was abundantly sufficient to catch the admiration of Adams, who told the gentleman he had certainly a good gardener. Sir, answered he, that gardener is now before you; whatever you fee here, is the work folely of my own hands. Whilft I am providing necessaries for my table, I likewise procure myself an appetite for them. In fair feafons, I feldom pass less than fix hours of the twenty-four in this place, where I am not

<sup>·</sup> Whoever the reader pleafes.

idle; and by these means I have been able to preferve my health ever fince my arrival here, without affiftance from physic. Hither I generally repair at the dawn, and exercise myself whilst my wife dreffes her children, and prepares our breakfaft: after which we are feldom afunder during the refidue of the day; for when the weather will not permit them to accompany me here, I am ufually within with them; for I am neither ashamed of converfing with my wife, nor of playing with my children: to fay the truth, I do not perceive that inferiority of understanding which the levity of rakes, the dulness of men of business, or the austerity of the learned would perfuade us of in women. As for my woman, I declare I have found none of my own fex capable of making juster obfervations on life, or of delivering them more agreeably; nor do I believe any one possessed of a faithfuller or braver friend. And fure as this friendship is fweetened with more delicacy and tenderness, so it is confirmed by dearer pledges than can attend the closest male alliance: for what union can be fo fast, as our common interest in the fruits of our embraces? Perhaps, Sir, you are not yourfelf a father: if you are not, be affured you cannot conceive the delight I have in my little ones. Would you not despise me, if you saw me stretched on the ground, and my children playing round me? " I should reverence the fight, (quoth A. 'f dams); I myfelf am now the father of fix, and " have been of eleven, and I can fay I never fcourg-" ed a child of my own, unless as his schoolmaster, " and then have felt every stroke on my own poste-" riors. And as to what you fay concerning women, "I have often lamented my own wife did not un-" derstand Greek."-The gentleman smiled, and anfwered, he would not be apprehended to infinuate that his own had an understanding above the care of her family; on the contrary, fays he, my Harrict

confe hath you of h my h rince

riet,

maid up, in as the

pife of man fall to feren

fiften proce ran fing;

youn was r was f

recov ly cle

ture, nefs

and a to the dispos

and ry th t

71

3

:

ot

ly of

y

at

of

u-

0.

be

5-

h-

ip

fo

nd

10

ur

elf ot

es.

hnd

Α-

nd

rg.

er,

en,

ın-

an-

ate

are

ict,

rict, I affure you, is a notable housewife, and few entlemen's housekeepers understand cookery or confectionary better; but these are arts which she hath no great occasion for now; however the wine rou commended fo much last night at supper, was of her own making, as is indeed all the liquor in my house, except my beer, which falls to my proince. "And I affure you it is as excellent, quoth Adams, as ever I tasted." We formerly kept a maid-fervant, but fince my girls have been growing up, the is unwilling to indulge them in idleness; for is the fortunes I shall give them will be very small, reintend not to breed them above the rank they are likely to fill hereafter, nor to teach them to defpife or ruin a plain husband. Indeed I could wish aman of my own temper, and a retired life, might fall to their lot: for I have experienced that calm ferene happiness which is seated in content, is inconfiftent with the hurry and buftle of the world. He was proceeding thus, when the little things being just rifen, an eagerly towards him, and asked him blefing; they were shy to the strangers; but the eldest equainted her father, that her mother and the young gentlewoman were up, and that breakfast was ready. They all went in, where the gentleman was furprised at the beauty of Fanny, who had now ecovered herself from her fatigue, and was entirey clean dreft; for the rogues who had taken away her purse, had left her her bundle. But if he was 6 much amazed at the beauty of this young creature, his guests were no less charmed at the tenderness which appeared in the behaviour of the hufband and wife to each other, and to their children, and at the dutiful and affectionate behaviour of these to their parents. These instances pleased the well disposed mind of Mr. Adams, equally with the readiness which they expressed to oblige their guests, and their forwardness to offer them the best of evetything in the house; and what delighted him still

fix yo

done

rad t

killed

he n

ram j

ight

de

giv

ill.

Th

erru

e of

he m

ion t

aftil

ite,

utes

ient

ies t

ney 1

nan i

then

ione

ll the

leafa

ave,

hem

ng th

epar

er in

ge.

more, was an instance or two of their charity: fo whilft they were at breakfast, the good woman w called forth to affift her fick neighbour, which for did with some cordials made for the public use and the good man went into his garden at the fam time, to fupply another with fomething which h wanted thence; for they had nothing which tho who wanted it were not welcome to. These goo people were in the utmost chearfulness, when the heard the report of a gun; and immediately after wards a little dog, the favourite of the eldest daugh ter, came limping in all bloody, and laid himfelf his miftres's feet; the poor girl, who was about leven years old, burst into tears at the fight; an prefently one of the neighbours came in, and in formed them, that the young fquire, the fon of th lord of the manor, had shot him as he passed by fwearing at the same time he would profecute the mafter of him for keeping a spaniel; for that h had given notice he would not fuffer one in the pa rish. The dog, whom his mistress had taken int her lap, died in a few minutes, licking her hand She expressed great agony at his loss; and the other children began to cry for their fifter's misfortune nor could Fanny herself refrain. Whilst the father and mother attempted to comfort her, Adam grasped his crab-stick, and would have sallied ou after the squire, had not Joseph with-held him He could not, however, bridle his tongue. - H pronounced the word Rafcal with great emphasis faid he deferved to be hanged more than a highway man, and wished he had the scourging of him. Th mother took her child, lamenting and carryin the dead favourite in her arms, out of the room when the gentleman faid, this was the fecond time this squire had endeavoured to kill the little wretch and had wounded him finartly once before, adding he could have no motive but ill-nature; for the little thing, which was not near as big as one's fift Wa fh

ıse

am

h

101

00

the

te

igh If a

at e

and in

th

by

th

t h

p<sub>2</sub>

int

and

the

une

the

lam

Ou

nin

- H

afis

way

Th

yin

time tch ling the

fift

had never been twenty yards from the house in the fix years his daughter had had it. He said he had done nothing to deserve this usage: but his father had too great a fortune to contend with. That he was as absolute as any tyrant in the universe, and had killed all the dogs, and taken away all the guns in the neighbourhood; and not only that, but he nampled down hedges, and rode over corn and sardens, with no more regard than if they were the highway. "I wish I could catch him in my garden, (says Adams), though I would rather forgive him riding through my house, than such an fill natured act as this."

The chearfulness of their conversation being incrupted by this accident, in which the guests could e of no fervice to their kind entertainer, and as he mother was taken up in administring consolaon to the poor girl, whose disposition was too good affily to forget the fudden loss of her little favouite, which had been fondling with her a few miutes before; and as Joseph and Fanny were impaent to get home and begin those previous ceremoies to their happiness which Adams had infifted on; bey now offered to take their leave. The gentlean importuned them much to stay dinner: but hen he found their eagerness to depart, he sumnoned his wife; and accordingly having performed the usual ceremonies of bows and curt'fies, more leafant to be feen than to be related, they took their ave, the gentleman and his wife heartily wishing hem a good journey, and they as heartily thankg them for their kind entertainment. They then sparted, Adams declaring, that this was the maner in which the people had lived in the golden

## CHAP. V.

W

to to

ex fcl

1

w w

fo fo

" fr

66

u di

" m

al

1 0

16 (1

" m

s lie

11 61

" ar

" bi

u tl

0 11

4 h

ec 11.

ce li

" ar

" y

" ir

" h

" e:

11 W

" to

" a

" r

" fo

" a

A disputation on schools, held on the road between Me Abraham Adams and Joseph; and a discovery no unwelcome to them both.

Our travellers having well refreshed themselve at the gentleman's house, Joseph and Fann with sleep, and Mr. Abraham Adams with ale and tobacco, renewed their journey with great alacrity and, pursuing the road in which they were directed, travelled many miles before they met with an adventure worth relating. In this interval, we shall present our readers with a very curious discourse, a we apprehend it, concerning public schools, which pass'd between Mr. Joseph Andrews and Mr. A braham Adams.

They had not gone far, before Adams calling to Joseph, asked him if he had attended to the gentle man's story; he answered, "to all the former part." And don't you think, (says he), he was a ver unhappy man in his youth?" "A very unhap

" py man indeed," answered the other. " Joseph (cries Adams, screwing up his mouth) I have found it: I have discovered the cause of all the

" misfortunes which befel him. A public school
Ioseph, was the cause of all the calamities which

" Joseph, was the cause of all the calamities who he afterwards suffered. Public schools are the

" nurferies of all vice and immorality. All the wicked fellows whom I remember at the univer

" fity were bred at them. — Ah Lord! I can re member as well as if it were but yesterday, a kno

" of them; they called them king's scholars, I for get why—very wicked fellows Joseph, you ma

" thank the Lord you were not bred at a publi

" school; you would never have preserved you virtue as you have. The first care I always take

is of a boy's morals; I had rather he should b

Ve

and

ity

ea

an ha

e, 2

nic

A

igt

ntle

art. ver

hap

eph

hav

th

100

hic

th

th

ver

re

kno

for

ma

ubli you

rake

d b

What is all the learning in the world compared to his immortal foul? What shall a man take in exchange for his foul! But the masters of great schools trouble themselves about no such thing. I have known a lad of eighteen at the university who hath not been able to say his catechism; but for my own part, I alway scourged a lad sooner for missing that than any other lesson. Believe me, child, all that gentleman's missfortunes arose from his being educated at a public school."

" It doth not become me, (answered Joseph) to "dispute any thing, Sir, with you, especially a matter of this kind; for to be sure you must be allowed by all the world, to be the best teacher of a school in all our country." "Yes, that, (fays Adams), I believe, is granted me; that I may without much vanity pretend to-nay, I be-" lieve I may go to the next county to :- but glori-" ari non est meum." --- " However, Sir, as you "are pleased to bid me speak, (says Joseph), you know my late master, Sir Thomas Booby, was "bred at a public fcool, and he was the finest gen-" tleman in all the neighbourhood. And I have often heard him fay, if he had a hundred boys, "he would breed them all at the same place. " was his opinion, and I have often heard him de-"liver it, that a boy taken from a public school. " and carried into the world, will learn more in one "year there, than one of a private education will in five. He used to say, the school itself initiated "him a great way, (I remember that was his very " expression); for great schools are little societies, "where a boy of any observation may see in epi-"tome what he will afterwards find in the world "at large." "Hinc illae lachrimae; for that ve-" school, where boys may be kept in innocence " and ignorance; for according to that fine pallage

Th

nai

led

ris

ann

e ha

had

wit

fch

anie

ooks

thi

nigar

choo

nd h

her c

xano

Ad

f the

was

ne w

ith t

ach (

bood

ough

efign

preac

nd tl

eas i

y W

He

ofed

eligh

rovi

ad p

Vo

" in the play of Cato, the only English tragedy; ever read,

"If knowledge of the world must make men villains "May Juba ever live in ignorance.

" Who would not rather preferve the purity ofh " child, than wish him to attain the whole circle " arts and sciences; which, by the bye, he ma er learn in the classes of a private school? For " would not be vain, but I esteem myself to be fe " cond to none, nulli secundum, in teaching the " things; fo that a lad may have as much learning " in a private, as in a public education." "An " with fubmission, (answered Joseph) he may ge " as much vice, witness several country gentlement " who were educated within five miles of their ow " houses, and are as wicked as if they ha " known the world from their infancy. I remem " ber when I was in the stable, if a young horse wa " vicious in his nature, no correction would mak " him otherwise. I take it to be equally the sam " among men: if a boy be of a mischievous, wid " ked inclination, no school, tho' ever so private " will ever make him good; on the contrary, ifh " be of a righteous temper, you may trust him to " London, or wherever elfe you pleafe, he will be " in no danger of being corrupted. Befides, I have " often heard my mafter fay, that the disciplin practifed in public schools was much better that " that in private." — " You talk like a jacka " napes, (fays Adams) and fo did your master " Discipline indeed! because one man scourge " twenty or thirty boys more in a morning that " another, is he therefore a better difciplinarian " I do presume to confer in this point with all wh " have taught from Chiron's time to this day; and " if I was mafter of fix boys only, I would prefer " as good discipline among them as the master of ce the

the greatest school in the world. I say nothing, young man; remember, I fay nothing; but if Sir Thomas himself had been educated nearer home. and under the tuition of fomebody, remember I name nobody, it might have been better for him but his father must institute him in the knowledge of the world! Nemo mortalium omnibus horis fapit." Joseph seeing him run on in this anner, asked pardon many times, affuring him chad no intention to offend. "I believe you had not, child, (faid he), and I am not angry with you: but for maintaining good discipline in a school; for this" - And he then ran on as before, amed all the masters who are recorded in old ooks, and preferred himfelf to them all. Indeed. this good man had any enthusiasm, or what the ulgar call a blind fide, it was this: he thought a hoolmaster the greatest character in the world, nd himself the greatest of all schoolmasters; neiher of which points he would have given up to Axander the Great at the head of his army.

na

r le

in

In

ge

OW

ha

em

wa

am

wic

ate

fh

n to

11 6

nav

olin

ha

cka

fter

rge

that

an

Wh

an

erv

er o

th

Adams continued his subject till they came to one f the beautifullest spots of ground in the universe. I was a kind of natural amphitheatre, formed by he winding of a small rivulet, which was planted with thick woods, and the trees rose gradually above ach other by the natural ascent of the ground they sood on; which ascent as they hid with their sughs, they seemed to have been disposed by the esign of the most skilful planter. The soil was bread with a verdure which no paint could imitate; and the whole place might have raised romantic isas in elder minds than those of Joseph and Fan-

without the affistance of love.

Here they arrived about noon, and Joseph prooled to Adams that they should rest a while in this dightful place, and refresh themselves with some rovisions which the good nature of Mrs. Wilson ad provided them with. Adams made no objection Vol. II. to the propofal; fo down they fat, and pulling ou a cold fowl, and a bottle of wine, they made a re past with a chearfulness which might have auch ed the envy of more splendid tables. I should no omit, that they found among their provisions paper containing a piece of gold, which imagining had been put there by mistake, won have returned back to reftore it; but he was at la convinced by Joseph, that Mr. Wilson had take this handsome way of furnishing them with a fun ply for their journey, on his having related the di stress which they had been in, when they were re lieved by the generofity of the pedlar. Adams faid he was glad to fee fuch an inftance of goodnefs, no fo much for the conveniency which it brough them, as for the fake of the doer, whose reward would be great in heaven. He likewise comforte himself with a reflection, that he should should have an opportunity of returning it him: for the gentleman was within a week to make a journey in to Somersetshire, to pass through Adams's parish and had faithfully promifed to call on him: a cir cumstance which we thought too immaterial to mention before; but which those who have as great an affection for that gentlemen as ourfelves, will re joice at, as it may give them hopes of feeing him a Then Joseph made a speech on charity which the reader, if he is fo disposed, may see it the next chapter; for we fcorn to betray him int any fuch reading, without first giving him warn ing.

CHAF

in fe

fe

kind

not

mov

hou

tion

wou

vert

of n

by h

his o

goo

pict

only

all 1

ima

floq

fo a

mar

rest the For lady bee

ferv

## CHAP. VI.

Moral-reflections by Joseph Andrews, with the hunting adventure, and Parson Adams's miraculous cscape

HAVE often wondered, Sir, faid Joseph, to ob-I ferve fo few instances of charity among mankind; for though the goodness of a man's heart did not incline him to relieve the distresses of his fellowcreatures, methinks the defire of honour should move him to it. What inspires a man to build fine houses, to purchase fine furniture, pictures, cloaths, and other things at a great expence, but an ambition to be respected more than other people? Now, would not one great act of charity, one instance of redeeming a poor family from all the miferies of poverty, restoring an unfortunate tradesman by a sum of money, to the means of procuring a livelihood by his industry, discharging an undone debtor from his debts, or a gaol, or any fuch like example of goodness, create a man more honour and respect than he could acquire by the finest house, furniture, pictures, or cloaths, that were ever beheld? For not only the object himself who was thus relieved, but all who heard the name of fuch a person, must, I imagine, reverence him infinitely more than the possession of all those other things; which, when we fo admire, we rather praise the builder, the workman, the painter, the lace-maker, the tailor, and the rest, by whose ingenuity they are produced, than the person who by his money makes them his own. For my own part, when I have waited behind my lady in a room bung with fine pictures, while I have been looking at them I have never once thought of their owner, nor hath any one elfe, as I ever observed; for when it has been asked whose picture that was, it was never once answered, the master's

ard

rik

the

ifh

cir

rea

n a

ity

int

of the house, but Ammyconni, Paul Varnish, Hannibal Scratchi, or Hogarthi, which I fuppole were the names of the painters; but if it was alked who redeemed fuch a one out of prison? who lent fuch a ruined tradefman money to fet him up who cloathed that family of poor fmall children It is very plain what must be the answer. And be fides, thefe great folks are mistaken, if they ima gine they get any honour at all by these means; for I do not remember I ever was with my lady at any house where she commended the house or furniture but I have heard her, at her return home, make fport and jeer at whatever the had before commend. ed: and I have been told by other gentlemen in livery, that it is the fame in their families; but I defy the wifest man in the world to turn a truly good action into ridicule. I defy him to do it. He who should endeavour it, would be laughed at himself. instead of making others laugh. No body scarce doth any good, yet they all agree in praising those who do. Indeed it is strange that all men should confent in commending goodness, and no man endeavour to deferve that commendation; whilft, on the contrary, all rail at wickedness, and all are as eager to be what they abuse. This I know not the reason of; but it is plain as day light to those who converse in the world, as I have done these three years. " Are all the great folks wicked then?" fays Fanny. To be fure there are some exceptions, anfwered Joseph. Some gentlemen of our cloth report charitable actions done by their lords and mafters; and I have heard Squire Pope, the great poe:, at my lady's table, tell stories of a man that lived at a place called Rofs, and another at the Bath, one Al- Al- I forget his name, but it is in the book of veries: This gentleman bath built up a ftately house too, which the Squire likes very well; but his charity is feen farther than his house, tho' it stands on a hill, ay, and brings him more honour too.

when it; a peop

fpeed have word lieve the l

> many fity a fleep prece

fider his e even fuch him.

one er po who than

Jo

her i

ears,

in the a parthern from

in a
was
hind
fuers

Pret

100. It was his charity that put him in the book. where the Squire fays he puts all those who deferve it; and, to be fure, as he lives among all the great people, if there were any fuch, he would know them. - This was all of Mr. Joseph Andrews' fpeech which I could get him to recollect, which I have delivered as near as was possible in his own words, with a very small embellishment. But I believe the reader hath not been a little furprised at the long filence of Parson Adams, especially as so many occasions offered themselves to exert his curiofity and observation. The truth is, he was fast afleep, and had so been from the beginning of the preceding narrative: and indeed, if the reader confiders that fo many hours had past fince he closed his eyes, he will not wonder at his repose, though even Henley himself, or as great an orator, (if any fuch be), had been in his rostrum or tub before

e a or ny re, ke

d.

li

le.

od

ho

lf.

rce

ald

n.

on

as

he

ho ree

IVS

an-

re•

na-

00-

li-

th,

the

p 3

ho'

our

QQ.

lofeph who, whilft he was fpeaking, had contimed in one attitude, with his head reclining on one fide, and his eyes cast on the ground, no foon. er perceived on looking up, the position of Adams, who was stretched on his back, and snored louder than the usual braying of the animal with long ears, than he turned towards Fanny, and taking her by the hand, began a dalliance, which, though confiltent with the purest innocence and decency. peither he would have attempted, nor she permitted before any witness. Whilst they amused themselves in this harmless and delightful manner, they heard a pack of hounds approaching in full cry towards them, and presently afterwards saw a hare pop forth from the wood, and, croffing the water, land within a few yards of them in the meadows. The hare was no fooner on shore, than it feated itself on its hinder legs, and liftened to the found of the purfuers. Fanny was wonderfully pleased with the little' wretch, and eagerly longed to have it in her arms,

that she might preserve it from the dangers which feemed to threaten it: but the rational part of the creation do not always aptly diftinguish their friend from their foes; what wonder then if this filly creat ture, the moment it beheld her, fled from the friend who would have protected it, and traverfing th meadows again, past the little rivulet on the oppo fite fide? It was however fo fpent and weak, that it fell down twice or thrice in its way. This affect ed the tender heart of Fanny, who exclaimed, with tears in her eyes, against the barbarity of worrying a poor innocent defenceless animal out of his life and putting it to the extremest torture for diver fion. She had not much time to make reflection of this kind; for on a fudden the hounds ruther thro' the wood, which refounded with their throat and the throats of their retinue who attended of them on horfaback. The dogs now past the rivule and puriued the footsteps of the hare: five horse men attempted to leap over, three of whom fucced ed, and two were, in the attempt, thrown from the faddles into the water; their companions, and the own horfes too, proceeded after their fport an left their friends and riders to invoke the assistance of Fortune, or employ the more active means of strength and agility for their deliverance. I leph however, was not fo unconcerned on this occasion he left Fanny for a moment to herfelf, and ran t the gentlemen, who were immediately on their leg shaking their ears, and easily, with the help of h hand, attained the bank, (for the rivulet was no at all deep); and, without flaying to thank the kind affister, ran dripping across the meadow, call ing to their brother sportsmen to stop their horse but they heard them not.

The hounds were now very little behind their pooreeling, staggering prey, which fainting almost a every step, crawled thro' the wood, and had almost got round to the place where Fanny stood, when

wa

was

out

piec

it W

the

fp01

trar

white

Ada

love

ling

clos

hap!

his (

their

kerc

bou

effec

noif

whie

ftan heac

reco

men ther

of h

or f

he c be a

ter;

in w

be a

not

fay,

clare

brav

per,

T

was overtaken by its enemies; and being driven out of the covert, was caught, and instantly tore to pieces before Fanny's face, who was unable to affist it with any aid more powerful than pity; nor could she prevail on Joseph, who had been himself a sportsman in his youth, to attempt any thing contrary to the laws of hunting, in favour of the hare,

which he faid was killed fairly.

nd

nd

h

po ha

ect

vit in

life

rer

on he

oat

ilet

rfe

eed hei

hei

an

enc s o

eph

n t

legs

h

no

hei

cal

rfes

000

ft a

mo

en wa

The hare was caught within a yard or two of Adams, who lay afleep at fome distance from the lovers; and the hounds, in devouring it, and pulling it backwards and forwards, had drawn it fo dole to him, that some of them (by mistake, perhaps, for the hare's ikin) laid hold of the skirts of his caffock: others, at the fame time, applying their teeth to his wig, which he had with a handkerchief fastened to his head, began to pull him about; and had not the motion of his body had more effect on him than feemed to be wrought by the noile, they must certainly have tasted his slesh, which delicious flavour might have been fatal to him: but being roused by these tuggings, he infantly awaked, and, with a jerk, delivering his head from his wig, he with most admirable dexterity recovered his legs, which now feemed the only members he could entrust his safety to therefore escaped likewise from at least a third part of his caffock, which he willingly left as his exuviae or spoils to the enemy, he fled with the utmost speed he could fummon to his affiftance. Nor let this be any detraction from the bravery of his character; let the number of the enemies, and the furprise in which he was taken, be confidered; and if there be any modern so outrageously brave, that he cannot admit of flight in any circumstance whatever, I lay, (but I whifper that foftly, and I folemaly dedare without any intention of giving offence to any brave man in the nation), I fay, or rather I whifper, that he is an ignorant fellow, and hath never

man

out

out

and

ges (

diff

equa the

hall

virgi

N

frefs

dogs

nis :

of h

of K

he bi

of m

one o

rtifi

ticks

he F

oiece

rhic

rack

o rep

rom

nfini

o ha ight

een

oxes

lted

le di

here

ulpit

on,

boo

read Homer nor Virgil, nor knows he anything of Hector or Turnus; nay, he is unacquainted with the history of some great men living, who, though as brave as lions, ay, as tigers, have run a way, the Lord knows how far, and the Lord knows why, to the furprise of their friends, and the entertainment of their enemies. But if person of fuch heroic disposition are a little offended a the behaviour of Adams, we affure them they shall be as much pleased at what we shall immediately re late of Joseph Andrews. The master of the pad was just arrived, or, as the sportsmen call it, come in, when Adams fet out, as we have before mentioned. This gentleman was generally faid to be great lover of humour; but not to mince the mate ter, especially as we are upon this subject, he wa a great Hunter of Men: indeed he had hithere followed the fport only with dogs of his own speci es; for he kept two or three couple of barking curs for that use only. However, as he though he had now found a man nimble enough, he wa willing to indulge himfelf with the other fport and accordingly crying out, Stole away, encoura ged the hounds to purfue Mr. Adams, swearing i was the largest jack-hare he ever faw: at the fain time hallooing and hooping as if a conquered for was flying before him: in which he was imitate by these two or three couple of human, or rathe two-legged curs on horseback which we have men tioned before.

Now thou, whoever thou art, whether a muse or by what other name soever thou chusest to be called, who presidest over Biography, and hast in spired all the writers of lives in these our times. Thou who didst insuse such wonderful humour into the pen of immortal Gulliver; who hast care fully guided the judgement, whilst thou hast exalt ed the nervous manly style of thy Mallet: thou who hast no hand in that dedication and presace, or the translation

in

tec

10

1 2

ord

On

a hal

react

ome

ien-

be :

nat

Was

erte

eci

in

igh

wa

ort

ura

gi

ain

for

ate

the

nen

use

o be

in

nes !

in

aro

calt

wh

the

ion

pranslations which thou wouldst willingly have struck out of the life of Cicero: lastly, thou who, without the affistance of the least spice of literature, and even against his inclination, hast, in some pages of his book, forced Colley Cibber to write English; do thou affist me in what I find myself unequal to: do thou introduce on the plain the young, the gay, the brave Joseph Andrews, whilst mentall view him with admiration and envy; tender rirgins with love and anxious concern for his safe-

No fooner did Joseph Andrews perceive the difres of his friend, when first the quickscenting logs attacked him, than he grafped his cudgel in his right hand, a cudgel which his father had of his grandfather, to whom a mighty strong man fKent had given it for a present in that day when e broke three heads on the stage. It was a cudgel of mighty strength and wonderful art, made by one of Mr. Deard's best workmen, whom no other rtificer can equal; and who hath made all those ticks which the beaus have lately walked with about he Park in a morning: but this was far his mafterbiece; on its head was ingraved a nose and chin, thich might have been mistaken for a pair of nutrackers. The learned have imagined it deligned orepresent the Gorgon! but it was in fact copied from the face of a certain long English baronet of finite wit, humour, and gravity. He did intend o have ingraved here many histories: as the first ight of Captain B - 's play, where you would have en critics in embroidery transplanted from the oxes to the pit, whose ancient inhabitants were exlted to the galleries, where they played on catcalls. le did intend to have painted an auction-room, here Mr. Cock would have appeared aloft in his ulpit, trumpeting forth the praises of a China baon, and with aftonishment wondering that "Nobody bids more for that fine, that superb"-He

and V

his WI

Then

had b

table,

prefet

leg;

frend

ried

uneq

have

may

inter

fnato

flick

till 1

grou

fuch

to h

viole

and

fron

und

for

mies

rela

nev

wha

she

din

The

of .

thr

hit

tha

bu.

T

TI

He did intend to have engraved many other things, but was forced to leave all out for want of room.

No fooner had Joseph grasped his cudgel in his hands, than lightning darted from his eyes; and the heroic youth, fwift of foot, ran with the utmost speed to his friend's affistance. He overtook him just as Rockwood had laid hold of the skirt of his caffock, which being torn, hung to the ground Reader, we would make a fimile on this occasion, but for two reasons; the first is, it would interrupt the description, which should be rapid in this part; but that doth not weigh much, many precedents occurring for fuch an interruption : the fecond, and much the greater reason is, that we could find no fimile adequate to our purpose: for indeed what instance could we bring to set before our reader's eyes at once the idea of friendship, courage youth, beauty, strength and swiftness; all which blazed in the person of Joseph Andrews. Let those therefore that describe lions and tigers, heroes her cer than both, raife their poems or plays with the fimile of Joseph Andrews, who is himself above the reach of any fimile.

Now Rockwood had laid fast hold on the parfon's skirts, and stopt his flight; which Joseph no fooner perceived, than he levelled his cudgel at his head, and laid him sprawling. Jowler and Ring wood then fell on his great coat, and had undoubt edly brought him to the ground, had not Joseph, collecting all his force, given Jowler fuch a rap on the back, that, quitting his hold, he ran howling over the plain: a harder fate remained for thee, O Ringwood; Ringwood the best hound that ever purfued a hare, who never threw his tongue but where the fcent was undoubtedly true; good at trailing; and fure in a highway, no babbler, no overrunner, respected by the whole pack, who, when ever he opened, knew the game was at hand; he fell by the stroke of Joseph! Thunder and Plunder and Wonder and Blunder, were the next victims of his wrath, and measured their lengths on the ground. Then Fairmaid, a bitch which Mr. John Temple had bred up in his own house, and fed at his own table, and lately sent the Squire fifty miles for a present, ran fiercely at Joseph, and bit him by the leg; no dog was ever fiercer than she, being defeended from an Amazonian breed, and had worried bulls in her own country, but now waged an unequal fight; and had shared the fate of those we have mentioned before, had not Diana (the reader may believe or not as he pleases), in that instant interposed, and in the shape of the huntsman snatched her favourite up in her arms.

The parson now faced about, and with his crabfick felled many to the earth, and scattered others, ill he was attacked by Cæsar and pulled to the ground. Then Joseph slew to his rescue. and with such might fell on the victor, that, O eternal blot

to his name! Cæfar ran yelping away.

h,

0

er

u

n

The battle now raged with the most dreadful violence, when, lo! the huntsman, a man of years and dignity, lifted his voice, and called his hounds from the fight; telling them in a language they understood, that it was in vain to contend longer; for that Fate had decreed the victory to their enemies.

Thus far the muse hath, with her usual dignity, related this prodigious battle, a battle we apprehend never equalled by any poet, romance or life-writer whatever, and having brought it to a conclusion, she ceased: we shall therefore proceed in our ordinary style with the continuation of this history. The Squire and his companions, whom the figure of Adams, and the gallantry of Joseph, had first thrown into a violent sit of laughter, and who had hitherto beheld the engagement with more delight than any chace, shooting match, race, cock-sighting, bull or bear-baiting had ever given them, began

now to apprehend the danger of their hounds many of which lay fprawling in the fields. The Squire, therefore, having first called his friends a bout him, as guards for fafety of his person, rod manfully up to the combatants, and, fummoning all the terror he was mafter of into his countenance demanded with an authoritative voice of Joseph what he meant by affaulting his dogs in that man ner. Joseph answered with great intrepidity that they had first fallen on his friend; and if they had belonged to the greatest man in the kingdom, h would have treated them in the same way; for whilst his veins contained a fingle drop of blood he would not stand idle by, and fee that gentleman (pointing to Adams) abused either by man of beaft: and having fo faid, both he and Adam brandished their wooden weapons, and put them felves into fuch a posture, that the Squire and hi company thought proper to preponderate, before they offered to revenge the cause of their four footed allies.

At this instant Fanny, whom the apprehension of Joseph's danger had alarmed so much, that, for getting her own, she had made the utmost ex came up. The Squire and all th pedition, horsemen were so surprised with her beauty that they immediately fixed both their eye and thoughts folely on her, every one declaring h had never feen fo charming a creature. Neithe mirth nor anger engaged them a moment longer but all fat in filent amaze. The huntfinan only wa free from her attraction, who was bufy in cutting the ears of the dogs, and endeavouring to recove them to life: in which he fucceeded fo well, that only two of no great note remained flaughtered of the field of action. Upon this the huntiman de clared, 'Twas well it was no worfe; for his part h could not blame the gentleman, and wondered h master would encourage the dogs to hunt Christians th

curio then fport ing at

any b

thoug

tory,

Squir

that

ther

that

chie

Ada

he t

that

the 1

grea

fo h

Ada

migh

while

muc

was :

ther

Josep

been

he co ward

which

attra vie (

which they l

fo mi

W

T

Vo

that it was the furest way to spoil them, to make them follow vermin, instead of sticking to a hare.

The Squire being informed of the little mischief that had been done, and perhaps having more mifchief of another kind in his head, accosted Mr. Adams with a more favourable aspect than before: he told him he was forry for what had happened: that he had endeavoured all he could, to prevent it the moment he was acquainted with his cloth, and greatly commended the courage of his fervant; for he imagined Joseph to be. He then invited Mr. Adams to dinner, and defired the young woman might come with him. Adams refused a long while; but the invitation was repeated with fo much earnestness and courtefy, that at length he was forced to accept it. His wig and hat, and other spoils of the field being gathered together by loseph, (for otherwise probably they would have been forgotten), he put himself into the best order he could; and then the horse and foot moved forward in the same pace towards the Squire's house. which stood at a very little distance.

Whilst they were on the road, the lovely Fanny attracted the eyes of all; they endeavoured to outvie one another in encomiums on her beauty; which the reader will pardon my not relating, as they had not any thing new or uncommon in them; so must be likewise my not setting down the many turious jests which were made on Adams; some of them declaring that parson-hunting was the best sport in the world; others commending his standing at bay, which they said he had done as well as any badger; with such like merriment, which. though it would ill become the dignity of this history, afforded much laughter and diversion to the

Squire and his facetious companions.

h

14

h

fo

od

iai

0

m

m

hi

on

ur

io

01

ex

th

aty

ye h

he

er

wa

tin

tha

lo

de

t h

ins

th

## CHAP. VII.

of the

folve

the i

have is n

with

atter

thre

retui

phra

his c

of th

His

and

proc

the

of h

a ft

whic

fpeci

out (

were

with

foun

to co

fure

furdi

ing f

purp

lows

did in

their

thing

quali

chara

Were

into :

feede

A scene of roasting, very nicely adapted to the present taste and times.

THEY arrived at the Squire's house just as his dinner was ready. A little dispute arose on the account of Fanny, whom the Squire, who was a batchelor, was desirous to place at his own tables but she would not consent, nor would Mr. Adam permit her to be parted from Joseph; so that she was at length with him consigned over to the kitchen, where the servants were ordered to make him drunk; a favour which was likewise intended for Adams; which design being executed, the Squire thought he should easily accomplish what he had when he first saw her, intended to perpetrate with

Fanny.

It may not be improper before we proceed farther to open a little the character of this gentleman and that of his friends. The master of this hould then, was a man of a very confiderable fortune, bachelor, as we have faid, and about forty yearso age: he had been educated (if we may use the ex pression) in the country, and at his own home under the care of his mother and a tutor, who ha orders never to correct him, nor to compel him to learn more than he liked, which it feems was ver little, and that only in his childhood; for from the age of fifteen he addicted himself entirely to hunt ing, and other rural amusements, for which h mother took care to equip him with horses, hound and all other necessaries; and his tutor, endeavour ing to ingratiate himfelf with his young pupil, wh would, he knew, be able handsomely to provide to him, became his companion, not only at thefe ex ercifes, but likewife over a bottle; which the youn Squire had a very early relish for. At the age of

hi

or va

le

m

th

ak

le

in

ad

id

er

an

ile

50

ex

me

ha

t

er

th

int

h

d

ur

vh

fo ex

ın

of twenty his mother began to think fhe had not fulfilled the duty of a parent; fhe therefore refolved to perfuade her fon, if possible, to that which the imagined would well supply all that he might have learned at a public school or university: this what they commonly call travelling; which, with the help of the tutor, who was fixed on to attend him, the easily fucceeded in. He made in three years the tour of Europe, as they term it, and returned home well furnished with French cloaths, phrases, and servants, with a hearty contempt for his own country; especially what had any savour of the plain spirit and honesty of our ancestors. His mother greatly applauded herfelf at his return; and now being mafter of his own fortune, he foon procured himself a feat in parliament, and was inthe common opinion one of the finest gentlemen of his age: but what diftinguished him chiefly, was a strange delight which he took in every thing which is ridiculous, odious, and abfurd in his own species, so that he never chose a companion without one or more of these ingredients, and those who were marked by nature in the most eminent degree with them, were most his favourites; if he ever found a man who either had not, or endeavoured to conceal these imperfections, he took great pleafure in inventing methods of forcing him into abfurdities which were not natural to him, or in drawing forth and exposing those that were; for which purpose he was always provided with a set of fellows whom we have before called curs, and who did indeed no great honour to the canine kind : their business was to hunt out and display every thing that had any favour of the abovementioned qualities, and especially in the gravest and best characters: but if they failed in their fearch, they were to turn even Virtue and Wisdom themselves into ridicule, for the diversion of their master and The gentlemen of cur-like disposition,

who were now at his house, and whom he had brought with him from London, were an old half-pay officer, a player, a dull poet, a quack-doctor, a scraping fidler, and a lame German dancing-ma-ster.

As foon as dinner was ferved, while Mr. Adams was faying grace, the captain conveyed his chair from behind him; fo that when he endeavoured to feat himself, he fell down on the ground, and thus compleated joke the first, to the great entertainment of the whole company. The fecond joke was perform ed by the poet, who fat next him on the other fide. and took an opportunity, while poor Adams wa respectfully drinking to the master of the house, to overturn a plate of foup into his breeches; which with the many apologies he made, and the parfon's gentle answers, caused much mirth in the company Joke the third was ferved up by one of the waiting men, who had been ordered to convey a quantity of gin into Mr. Adams's ale, which he declaring tob the best liquor he ever drank, but rather too rich of the malt, contributed again to their laughter. Mr. Adams, from whom we had most of this relation could not recollect all the jefts of this kind practife on him, which the inoffensive disposition of his own heart made him flow in discovering; and indeed had it not been for the information which we received from a fervant of the family, this part of our history, which we take to be none of the least cu rious, must have been deplorably imperfect; tho we must own it probable, that some more jokes were (as they call it) cracked during their dinner; bu we have by no means been able to come at the know ledge of them. When dinner was removed, the poet began to repeat some verses, which he said were made extempore. The following is a copy of them, procured with the greatest difficulty.

An

Di

His

W

In

Bu

To

Co

Fo

At

wig,

rathe

head.

the po

Subject

reflec

were i

lt was

talent

inbro

made

dat he

was v

conclu

telling

hich

pulled his fid

master he re "hac

" de

• Al

An extempore POEM on Parson Adams.

Did ever mortal fuch a parfon view,
His cassock old, his wig not over new?
Well might the hounds have him for fox mistaken,

In smell more like to that than rusty bacon \*.
But would it not make any mortal stare,
To see this parson taken for a hare.
Could Phoebus err thus grossly, even he
For a good player might have taken thee.

Ŋ

be

ch

10

on fed

wr ed

re

u

ho ere

bu we the

aid

0

A

At which words the bard whip'd off the player's wig, and received the approbation of the company, rather perhaps for the dexterity of his hand than his head. The player, instead of retorting the jest on the poet, began to display his talents on the same Abject. He repeated many scraps of wit out of plays, reflecting on the whole body of the clergy, which were received with great acclamations by all prefent. It was now the dancing-master's turn to exhibit his alents: he therefore, addressing himself to Adams obroken English, told him, He was a man very well made for de dance, and he suppose, by his walk, dat he had learn of some great master. He faid, it was ver pretty quality in clergyman to dance; and concluded with defiring him to dance a minuet; elling him, His cassock would serve for petticoats; and that he would himself be his partner. At which words, without waiting for an answer, he bulled out his gloves, and the fiddler was preparing naster wagers that the parson outdanced him, which refused, faying, "He believed so too; for he had never feen any man in his life who looked de dance fo well as de gentleman: He then

All hounds that will hunt fox or other vermin, will hunt a piece

« cal

me me

" ker

" dal

" per " sha " we

" fw

" called

stepped forward to take Adams by the hand, which the latter hastily withdrew, and at the same time clenching his fift, advised him not to carry the jeft too far, for he would not endure being put upon. The dancing-mafter no fooner faw the fift than he prudently retired out of its reach, and ftood aloof, mimicking Adams, whose eyes were fixed on him, not gueffing what he was at, but to avoid his laying hold on him, which he had once attempted. In the mean while, the captain perceiving an opporthe mean while, the captain perceiving an oppor-tunity, pinned a cracker or devil to the caffock, and then lighted it with their little fmoking-candle. A. "fall then lighted it with their little smoking-candle. As dams being a stranger to this sport, and believing he had been blown up in reality, started from his chair, and jumped about the room, to the infinite we joy of the beholders, who declared he was the best dancer in the universe. As soon as the devil had done tormenting him, and he had a little recovered his confusion, he returned to the table, standing up in the posture of one who intended to make a speech. They all cried out, Hear him, hear him; and he then spoke in the following manner: "Sing of I am sorry to see one to whom Providence hat "You been so bountiful in bestowing his favours, make "who is so ill and ungrateful a return for them: for "her tho' you have not insulted me yourself, it is view the "tho' you have not infulted me yourself, it is view the fible you have delighted in those that do it, not with have once discouraged the many rudenesses which guidenesses the have been shewn towards me; indeed toward the yourself, if you rightly understood them: for your anest and brother towards the first the same your guest and brother towards. "thought proper to produce fome poetry upon me He the the fubiest then all " pleased to treat me with disrespect as a parson apprehend my order is not the object of scorn " nor that I can become fo, unless by being a dif
grace to it, which I hope poverty will never b

he et le et la

r-

nd

A. ng

ite eft ad

ake

for vi

not ick ird or in

ath

me r b

eet 1

orn

dif r b

lled

called. Another gentleman, indeed, hath repeated fome fentences, where the order itself is mentioned with contempt. He fays they are ta-ken from plays. I am fure fuch plays are a fcandal to the government which permits them, and cursed will be the nation where they are representferve; they themselves, when they reflect, must allow the behaviour to be as improper to my years as to my cloth. You found me, Sir, travelling with two of my parishioners, (I omit your hounds "falling on me; for I have quite forgiven it, wheit proceeded from the wantonness or negligence well persuade you that your invitation was an act of charity, tho' in reality we were well provided: yes, Sir, if we had had an hundred miles to travel, we had sufficient to bear our expences "in a noble manner." (At which words he produced the half guinea which was found in the baftet). "I do not shew you this out of oftentation " of riches, but to convince you I speak truth.
"Your seating me at your table was an honour which I did not ambitiously affect. When I was here, I endeavoured to behave towards you with the utmost respect; if I have failed, it was not with defign; nor could I, certainly, fo far be guilty as to deferve the infults I have fuffered. If they were meant, therefore, either to my order or my poverty, (and you fee I am not very poor), the shame doth not ly at my door, and I heartily " pray that the fin may be averted from yours." He thus finished, and received a general clap from the whole company. Then the gentleman of the bouse told him, 'he was sorry for what had hap-"pened: that he could not accuse him of any " share in it: that the verses were, as himself had well observed, so bad, that he might easily an-"fwer them; and for the serpent, it was undoubt-

recor

dams

" th

good

liquo

the w

heart

great

laugh

had a

laugh

in his

form

vity

mirtl

" fo

" ra

" th

" th

" of

u or

" at

" m

" m

" or

mend

" of

" th

" in

docto

" DI

" te

" ge

" fo

mifc

" edly a very great affront done him by the dan-" cing-master, for which, if he well threshed him, " as he deferved, he should be very much pleased " to fee it," (in which probably he fpoke truth). Adams answered, "Whoever had done it, it " was not his profession to punish him that way; " but for the person whom he had accused, 1 am " a witness, (says he), of his innocence; for I had " my eye on him all the while. Whoever he was, "God forgive him, and bestow on him a little more " fense as well as humanity." The captain answered with a furly look and accent, "That he hoped " he did not mean to reflect on him; d-n him, " he had as much immanity as another, and if any " man faid he had not, he would convince him of his " mistake by cutting his throat." Adams smiling, faid, "He believed he had spoke right by accident." To which the captain returned, "What do you " mean by my speaking right? If you was not a " parson, I would not take these words; but your " gown protects you. If any man who wears a " fword had faid fo much, I had pulled him by the " nose before this." Adams replied, " if he at-" tempted any rudeness to his person, he would not "find any protection for himself in his gown;" and, clenching his fift, declared, " he had threth-" ed many a ftouter man." The gentleman did all he could to encourage this warlike disposition in Adams, and was in hopes to have produced a battle: but he was disappointed; for the captain made no other answer than, "It is very well you " are a parson;" and so drinking off a bumper to old mother church, ended the dispute.

Then the doctor who had hitherto been filent, and who was the gravest, but most mischievous dog of all, in a very pompous speech highly applauded what Adams had said, and as much discommended the behaviour to him. He proceeded so encomiums on the church and poverty: and lastly

recommended

n-

n,

1).

it

y :

un

ad

as,

116

er

ed

m, ny

his

ig.

.

ou a

up

a

at-

ot

h.

all in

a

in

ou

to

nt,

us

u-

n•

ly

recommended forgiveness of what had pass'd to Adams, who immediately answered, "That every " thing was forgiven;" and, in the warmth of his goodness, he filled a bumper of strong beer, (a houor he preferred to wine), and drank a health to the whole company, shaking the captain and the port heartily by the hand, and addressing himself with great respect to the doctor; who indeed had not hughed outwardly at any thing that pass'd, as he had a perfect command of his muscles and could hugh inwardly without betraying the least fymptoms in his countenance. The doctor now began a second formal speech, in which he declaimed against all levity of conversation, and what is usually called mirth. He faid, "There were amusements fitted " for the persons of all ages and degrees, from the " rattle to the discussing a point in philosophy, and " that men discovered themselves in nothing more "than in the choice of their amulements; for " (lays he) as it must greatly raise our expectation " of the future conduct in life of boys, whom in-"their tender years we perceive instead of taw " or balls, or other childish playthings, to chuse, "at their leifure hours, to exercise their genius in "contentions of wit, learning, and fuch like; for "must it inspire one with equal contempt of a " man, if we should discover him playing at taw "or other childish play." Adams highly commended the doctor's opinion, and faid, "he had " often wondered at some passages in ancient au-"thors, where Scipio, Lælius, and other great " men, were reprefented to have passed many hours. "in amusements of the most trifling kind." The doctor replied, " He had by him an old Greek ma-"nuscript, where a favourite diversion of Socra-" tes was recorded." " Ay. (says the parson. ea-"gerly, I should be most infinitely obliged to you " for the favour of perusing it." The doctor promifed to fend it him: and further faid, "that he " believed

"believed he could describe it." "I think, (say deed, he), as near as I can remember, it was this than to There was a throne erected, on one side of which on each say a think on the other a queen, with higher their grands and attendants ranged on both sides whole to them was introduced an ambassador, which ed the part Socrates always used to perform himself and when he was led up to the footsteps of the was in throne, he addressed himself to the monarchs in tho, some grave speech, full of virtue, and goodness and morality, and such like. After which he made was seated between the king and queen, and siately royally entertained. This I think was the chie part—Perhaps I may have forgot some particular part—Perhaps I may have forgot some particular series faid, it was indeed a diversion worthy the relaxation of so great a man; and thought something residually it should be instituted among our great and professions in the source of the series o fembling it should be instituted among our great and personal instead of cards and other idle pastime, it is as which he was informed they tristed away too much of their lives. He added, The Christian religion and low was a nobler subject for these speeches than any so crates could have invented. The gentleman of the house approved what Mr. Adams said, and deck earth red, He was resolved to perform the ceremony this well were evening. To which the doctor objected as a lost fire very evening. To which the doctor objected, as no not fit one was prepared with a speech: "unless (said he epart turning to Adams with a gravity of cour tenance which would have deceived a more than the knowing man), you have a sermon about you try him. "Doctor." — "Sir, (says Adams), I never trave ent, without one, for fear of what may happen. He was eafily prevailed on by his worthy friend, he now called the doctor, to undertake the part of the ambaffador; fo that the gentleman fent imme diate orders to have the throne erected; which wa performed before they had drank two bottles; an perhaps the Feader will hereafter have no great re fon to admire the nimbleness of the servants. In deed

cl f h

h

in

nie cu

xa

re

rea uci sion So th

ecka thi

is not he out more you

rave

d, a rt o nme

In

deed, to confess the truth, the throne was no more than this; there was a great tub of water provided, on each fide of which were placed two ftools raifed higher than the furface of the tub, and over the whole was laid a blanket; on these stools were plated the king and queen, namely, the master of the house and the captain. And now the ambaffador tho, having read his fermon, to the great enterainment of all present, was led up to his place. nd feated between their Majesties. They immediately rose up, when the blanket, wanting its supports at either end, gave way, and foused Adams wer head and ears in the water; the captain made his escape, but unluckily the gentleman himself not king as nimble as he ought, Adams caught hold f him before he descended from his throne, ind pulled him in with him, to the entire fecret faisfaction of all the company. Adams, after ducking the fquire twice or thrice, leapt out of the tub,
and looked sharp for the doctor, whom he would
certainly have conveyed to the same place of hoour; but he had wifely withdrawn: he then
carched for his crab stick, and having found that,
as well as his fellow travellers, he declared he would
cet flav a moment longer in such a house. He then ot stay a moment longer in such a house. He then eparted, without taking leave of his host, whom e had exacted a more severe revenge on than he stended: for as he did not use sufficient care to ly himself in time, he caught a cold by the accient, which threw him into a fever that had like to have cost him his life.

#### CHAP. VIII.

Which some readers will think too Short, and others to long.

ADAMS, and Joseph, who was no less enrage than his friend at the treatment he met with went out with their sticks in their hands, and ca ried off Fanny, notwithstanding the opposition the fervants, who did all, without proceeding violence, in their power to detain them. The walked as fast as they could, not so much from a apprehension of being pursued, as that Mr. Adam might, by exercise, prevent any harm from thew The gentleman, who had given fuch orde to his fervants concerning Fanny, that he did n in the least fear her getting away, no fooner hea that the was gone, than he began to rave, and in mediately dispatched several with orders, either bring her back, or never return. The poet, t player, and all but the dancing mafter and docto went on this errand.

The night was very dark, in which our frien began their journey; however, they made such e pedition that they foon arrived at an inn, which w at leven miles distance. Here they unanimou confented to pass the evening, Mr. Adams bei now as dry as he was before he had fet out on embaffy.

The inn, which indeed we might call an a house, had not the words, the New Inn, been w on the fign, afforded them no better provision the bread and cheefe, and ale; on which, however they made a very comfortable meal; for hunger better than a French cook.

They had no fooner supped, than Adams, return ing thanks to the Almighty for his food, declar he had eat his homely commons with much grea fatisfacti

great ficed wealt the h

" tri

latisf

pipe l himfe " you " kin " exp

" for " on " ftre " Sui ill "

> gre lan the to c mai

vigo us 1 fect pro who flotl

fhor pain then or ft lives

than hear thut bow me ·

ture) truly VOL fatisfaction than his splendid dinner, and expressed great contempt for the folly of mankind, who facrificed their hopes of heaven to the acquisition of vast wealth; fince fo much comfort was to be found in the humblest state and the lowest provision. "Very "true," fays a grave man, who fat fmoking his pipe by the fire, and who was a traveller as well as himself; "I have often been as much surprised as you are, when I consider the value which mankind in general fet on riches; fince every day's "experience shews us how little is in their power; "for what indeed truly defirable can they bestow "on us? Can they give beauty to the deformed, frength to the weak, or health to the infirm? Surely if they could, we should not see so many ill favoured faces haunting the affemblies of the great, nor would fuch numbers of feeble wretches languish in their coaches and palaces. No, not the wealth of a kingdom can purchase any paint to drefs pale ugliness in the bloom of that young maiden, nor any drugs to equip difease with the vigour of that young man. Do not riches bring us solicitude instead of rest, envy instead of affection, and danger instead of fatety? Can they prolong their own poffession, or lengthen his days who enjoys them? So far otherwise, that the floth, the luxury, the care which attend them, horten the lives of millions, and bring them with pain and mifery to an untimely grave. Where then is their value, if they can neither embellish or strengthen our forms, sweeten or prolong our lives? Again - Can they adorn the mind more than the body? Do they not rather swell the heart with vanity, puff up the cheeks with pride, thut our ears to every call of virtue, and our bowels to every motive of compassion!" "Give me your hand, brother, (faid Adams in a rapture); for I suppose you are a clergyman." "No truly," answered the other, (indeed he was a VOL. II. prieft

an

n

ear

12

t

en

1 0

W

ou

ei

nl

th

eve

ger

tur

real

com

up011

had -

had I

" it;

4 Ch

u ke

h.

a tak

" fin

on v

ten

gre

pou

any

my

eve

mo

no

the

for

and

ing,

whe

Vou

am

forc

had

take

hate

out

deed

their

owev

e ho

erefo

andin

as th

priest of the church of Rome; but those who un derstand our laws, will not wonder he was no over-ready to own it.) "Whatever you are, (crie " Adams), you have spoken my sentiments: " believe I have preached every fyllable of you " fpeech twenty times over : for it hath always an " peared to me easier for a cable-rope (which, h " the way, is the true rendering of that word w " have translated camel), to go through the eye " a needle, than for a rich man to get into the " kingdom of heaven." " That, Sir, (faid the " other), will be easily granted you by divines, an " is deplorably true: but as the prospect of ou " good at a distance doth not so forcibly affect u " it might be of some service to mankind to " made thoroughly fentible, which I think the " might be with very little ferious attention, the even the bleffings of this world are not to l " purchased with riches. A doctrine, in my or " nion, not only metaphyfically, but, if I may " fay, mathematically demonstrable; and which " have been always to perfectly convinced of, th " I have a contempt for nothing fo much as f " gold." Adams now began a long discourse; b as most which he faid occurs among many author who have treated this fubject, I shall omit inferti During its continuance Joseph and Fanny tired to reft, and the host likewife left the root When the English parson had concluded, the R mish refumed the discourse, which he continu with great bitterness and invective; and at last en ed, by defiring Adams to lend him eighteen pen to pay his reckoning; promising, if he never pa him, he might be affured of his prayers. I good man answered, that eighteenpence would too little to carry him any very long journey; t he had half a guinea in his pocket, which he wo divide with him. He then fell to fearthing pockets, but could find no money; for indeed compa

company with whom he dined, had past one jest upon him which we did not then enumerate, and had picked his pocket of all that treasure which he

had so oftentatiously produced.

ap w o th

th

an ou

u

1

the

th

0 1

op

ich

th

s f

; 6

tho

ru

y I

001

e R

inu

en

pen

r pa

ald

; tl

WOU

ng

ed

mpa

" Bless me, (cried Adams) I have certainly lost Fit: I can never have spent it. Sir, as I am a "Christian, I had a whole half guinea in my pocket this morning, and have not now a fingle halfpenny of it left. Sure the devil must have taken it from me." "Sir, (answered the priest, familing), you need make no excuses; if you are not willing to lend me the money, I am contented." "Sir, (cries Adams), if I had the greatest sum in the world; ay, if I had ten pounds about me, I would bestow it all to rescue any Christian from distress. I am more vexed at my lofs on your account than my own. ever any thing fo unlucky? because I have no money in my pocket, I shall be suspected to be no Christian." "I am more unlucky, (quoth the other), if you are as generous as you fay: for really a crown would have made me happy, and conveyed me in plenty to the place I am going, which is not above twenty miles off, and where I can arrive by to-morrow night: I affure you I am not accustomed to travel pennyless. am but just arrived in England; and we were forced by a storm in our passage to throw all we had overboard. I don't suspect but this fellow will take my word for the trifle I owe him; but I hate to appear fo mean as to confess myself without a fhilling to fuch people; for these, and indeed too many others, know little difference in their estimation between a beggar and a thief." owever, he thought he should deal better with choft that evening than the next morning; he erefore resolved to set out immediately, notwithanding the darkness; and, accordingly, as foon is the host returned, he communicated to him

Aa2

the fituation of his affairs; upon which the hole foratching his head, answered, "Why, I do no know, master, if it be so, and you have no mo no new, I must trust, I think, though I had rathe always have ready money if I could; but, marry you look like so honest a gentleman, that I don' fear your paying me, if it was twenty times a much." The priest made no reply, but takin leave of him and Adams as fast as he could, no without confusion, and perhaps with some distru

of Adams's fincerity, departed.

He was no sooner gone than the host fell a-sha king his head, and declared, if he had fuspected the fellow had no money, he would not have draw him a fingle drop of drink; faying, he despaired ever feeing his face again; for he looked like confounded rogue. " Kabbit the fellow, (cries he " I thought by his talking fo much about riche " that he had a hundred pounds at least in h " pocket." Adams chid him for his suspicion which he faid were not becoming a christian; an then, without reflecting on his lofs, or confidering how he himself should depart in the morning, I retired to a very homely bed, as his companions ha before; however, health and fatigue gave them sweeter repose than is often in the power of velv and down to bestow.

### CHAP. IX.

Containing as furprising and bloody adventures as a be found in this, or perhaps in any other authent history.

IT was almost morning, when Joseph Andrew whose eyes the thoughts of his dear Fanny has opened, as he lay fondly meditating on that love creature, heard a violent knocking at the door wer which he lay. He presently jumped out of be

no to ther not t he k fuspio

and

Squin negati well, opens

quest O ho order Fann heard hastil

fast as most bracir bid he defend (fai

mer havich would and walleep,

nan h he pro rom l ark, ence t

Ada

elicat

ry n

in

nd

u

h

te

aw d o

ce

he

he h

on

an

rin

, h

ha

m

elv

ent

rew

ove or

f be

20

and opening the window, was asked if there was no travellers in the house; and presently by another voice, if two men and a young woman had not taken up there their lodging that night. Tho' he knew not the voices, he began to entertain a inspicion of the truth; for indeed he had received fome information from one of the fervants of the Squire's house, of his defign; and answered in the regative. One of the fervants who knew the hoft rell, called out to him by his name, just as he had opened another window, and asked him the same question; to which he answered in the affirmative. Tho! faid another; have we found you? and ordered the host to come down and open his door. Janny, who was as wakeful as Joseph, no sooner heard all this; than she leaped from her bed, and aftily putting on her gown and petticoats, ran as aft as possible to Joseph's room, who then was alnost dress'd: he immediately let her in, and emracing her with the most passionate tenderness, idher fear nothing, for that he would die in her efence. " Is that a reason why I should not fear, (said she), when I should lose what is dearer to me than the whole world?" Joseph then kiffing er hand, faid, He could almost thank the occasion hich had extorted from her a tenderness she ould never indulge him with before. He than ran ad waked his bedfellow Adams, who was yet fast fleep, notwithstanding many calls from Joseph; ut was no fooner made fensible of their danger, han he leaped from his bed, without confidering he presence of Fanny, who hastily turned her face om him, and enjoyed a double benefit from the ark, which, as it would have prevented any ofence to an innocence less pure, or a modesty less elicate, so it concealed even those blushes which ere raised in her.

Adams had soon put, on all his cloaths but his

Adams had foon put on all his cloaths but his meches, which in the hurry he forgot; however,

Aa3

they were pretty well supplied by the length of his other garments: and now the house-door being opened, the captain, the poet, the player, and three fervants came in. The captain told the hoft, that two fellows who were in his house had run away with a young woman, and defired to know in which room the lay. The hoft, who prefently believed the story, directed them, and instantly the captain and poet, jostling one another, ran up.
was the nimblest, entering the chamber first, searched the bed, and every other part, but to no purpose; the bird was flown, as the impatient reader, her f who might otherwise have been in pain for her, was before advertised. They then inquired where the law, and were approaching the chamber, when ing to have been in pain for her when ing to have a purposed to be that he would have the law. shoot the first man who offered to attack the door. The captain inquired what fire arms they had; to on, a which the hoft answered, he believed they had dams, none, nay, he was almost convinced of it: for he had heard one ask the other in the evening, what of the they should have done if they had been overtaken when they had no arms? To which the other answered, they would have defended themselves with their sticks as long as they were able, and God would assist a just cause. This satisfied the captured but not the poet who prudently retreated themselves. tain, but not the poet, who prudently retreated apprel down stairs, faying, it was his business to record great actions, and not to do them. The captain the bows no fooner well fatisfied that there were no fire was no fooner well fatisfied that there were no fire proach arms, than bidding defiance to gun-powder, and head, fwearing he loved the fmell of it, he ordered the fervants to follow him, and marching boldly up intended the fervants foon helped him to accomplish. When it was opened, they discovered the enemy drawn up the court have deep. Adams in the front and Francisch field. three deep, Adams in the front, and Fanny in the lifted rear. The captain told Adams, that if they would noftr go all back to the house again, they should be citalfpe

from guise, cientl' to the fured helple

villy

order

there

ce at ay

ne

nd

h-

r-

er, as

he at

en ınith od apted ord ain

re inc the up ich

ner up the

uld ci ill

illy treated; but unless they consented, he had orders to carry the young lady with him, whom here was great reason to believe they had stolen from her parents; for, notwithstanding her difguife, her air, which she could not conceal, sufficently discovered her birth to be infinitely superior. otheirs. Fanny burfting into tears, folemnly affired him he was mistaken; that she was a poor. helpless foundling, and had no relation in the world, which she knew of; and throwing herself on her. mees, begged that he would not attempt to take her from her friends, who, she was convinced, would die before they would lose her; which Aing to an oath. The captain fwore he had no lei-lid fire to talk, and bidding them thank themselves for what happened, he ordered the servants to fall to m, at the same time endeavouring to pass by A-ad dams, in order to lay hold on Fanna h dams confirmed with words not far from amountdams, in order to lay hold on Fanny; but the parson interrupting him, received a blow from one of them, which, without considering whence it of them, which, without confidering whence it came, he returned to the captain, and gave him so dexterous a knock in that part of the stomach which is vulgarly called the pit, that he staggered some paces backwards. The captain, who was not accustomed to this kind of play, and who wisely apprehended the consequence of such another, two of them seeming to him equal to a thrust through the body, drew forth his hanger as Adams approached him, and was levelling a blow at his proached him, and was levelling a blow at his head, which would probably have filenced the meacher for ever, had not Joseph in that instant lifted up a certain huge stone pot of the chamber with one hand, which six beaus could not have ifted with both, and discharged it, together with the contents, full in the captain's face. The up-lifted hanger dropped from his hand, and he fell prostrate on the floor with a lumpish noise, and his salfpence rattled in his pocket: the red liquor

which his veins contained, and the white liquor which the pot contained, ran in one ftream down his face and his clothes. Nor had Adams quite e fcaped, some of the water having in its passage shed its honours on his head, and began to trickle down the wrinkles or rather furrows of his cheeks when one of the fervants fnatching a mop out of pail of water which had already done its duty in washing the house, pushed it in the parson's face; ye could not he bear him down; for the parson wrest ing the mog from the fellow with one hand, with the other brought his enemy as low as the earth having given him a ftroke over that part of the face, where, in fome men of pleafure, the natura and artificial nofes are conjoined.

Hitherto Fortune seemed to incline the victor on the travellers' fide, when according to her cu stom, she began to shew the fickleness of her dif position: for now the host entering the field, or rather the chamber of battle, flew directly at Jo feph, and darting his head into his ftomach, (for he was a flout fellow, and an expert boxer), almoi staggered him; but Joseph stepping one leg back did, with his left hand fo chuck him under the chit that he recled. The youth was purfuing his blow with his right hand, when he received from oneo the fervants fuch a stroke with a cudgel on hi temples, that it inftantly deprived him of fenfe and he measured his length on the ground.

Fanny rent the air with her cries, and Adam was coming to the affistance of Joseph, but the tw ferving men and the hoft now fell on him, an foon fubdued him, though he fought like a mad man, and looked fo black with the impressions h had received from the mop, that Don Quixot would certainly have taken him for an inchante But now follows the most tragical part for the captain was rifen again, and feeing Josep on the floor, and Adams secured, he instantly lai

hair, feet d frairs horfe ing th parte

bold

and F

now (

than : his th of fa Squir Th

might Fanny dame he ot himfe

back, hey d totak had fa

A dif ther

DEF D we hemfe tage; ain y

umor ore d he au hold on Fanny, and with the affistance of the poet and player, who hearing the battle was over, were now come up, dragged her, crying and tearing her hair, from the fight of her Joseph, and with a perfect deafness to all her entreaties, carried her down stairs by violence, and fastened her on the player's horse, and the captain mounting his own, and leading that on which this poor miserable wretch was, departed, without any more consideration of her cries than a butcher hath of those of a lamb; for indeed his thoughts were entertained only with the degree of favour which he had promised himself from the squire on the success of this adventure.

The fervants, who were ordered to fecure Adams and Joseph as safe as possible, that the Squire
might receive no interruption to his design on poor
Fanny, immediately, by the poet's advice, tied Adame to one of the bed-posts, as they did Joseph on
the other side, as soon as they could bring him to
himself; and then leaving them together, back to
back, and desiring the host not to set them at liberty, nor to go near them till he had further orders,
they departed towards their master; but happened
take a different road from that which the captain.

had fallen into.

101

Wn

e

ied

WI

f

ye

eft itl

th.

ra

cu

dif

0

Jo for lof lok

hir

ov e o

hi afe

m

an

h

O

te

rt

e plai

# CHAP. X.

Adifourse between the poet and the player; of no other use in this history, but to divert the reader.

BEFORE we proceed any farther in this tragedy, we shall leave Mr. Joseph and Mr. Adams to hemselves, and imitate the wise conductors of the tage; who in the midst of a grave action, enterain you with some excellent piece of satire or numour called a dance. Which piece indeed is therefore danced, and not spoke, as it is delivered to he audience by persons whose thinking faculty is,

DY

by most people held to ly in their heels; and to whom, as well as heroes, who think with their hands, Nature hath only given heads for the sike of conformity, and as they are of use in dancing

to hang their hats on.

The poet, addressing the player, proceeded thus " As I was faying," (for they had been at this diff course all the time of the engagement above stairs) " the reason you have no good new plays is evi-" dent; it is from your discouragement of authors "Gentlemen will not write, Sir, they will not " write without the expectation of fame or profit " or, perhaps, both. Plays are like trees, which " will not grow without nourishment; but, like " mushrooms, they shoot up spontaneously, as i " were, in a rich foil. The muses, like vines " may be pruned, but not with a hatchet. The " town, like a peevish child, knows not what i " defires, and is always best pleased with a rattle " A farce writer hath indeed fome chance for fue et ceis; but they have lost all taste for the sub " lime. Though I believe one reason of their de " pravity is the badness of the actors. If a man " writes like an angel, Sir, those fellows knowno " how to give a fentiment utterance." " Not fe " fast," fays the player, " the modern actors an " as good at least as their authors, nay, they com " nearer their illustrious predecessors, and I ex " pect a Booth on the stage again, sooner than " Shakespeare or an Otway: and indeed, I may " turn your observation against you, and with " truth fay, that the reason no authors are encou " raged, is, because we have no good new plays. " I have not affirmed the contrary," faid the poet " but I am furprifed you grow fo warm ; you can " not imagine yourself interested in this dispute " I hope you have a better opinion of my taffe " than to apprehend I fquinted at yourfelf. No. Sir " if we had fix fuch actors as you, we should foo

" in
" trut
" judg
" me

" riva

" tim

" it in

" you " exce " me " out " as l

what there in Sha

just eno the don the

bor

mai

ritle the mu in

am hav the

less seer with

to hea uc

de

nan

no

ar

om

ex

m

ma

vit

cou

ys.

oet

can

ute afte

Sir

fool

riva

"rival the Bettertons and Sandfords of former "times; for, without a compliment to you, I think "it impossible for any one to have excelled you "in most of your parts. Nay, it is a folemn "truth, and I have heard many, and all great "judges express as much; and you will pardon me if I tell you, I think every time I have feen "you lately, you have constantly acquired some new excellence, like a snowball. You have deceived "me in my estimation of perfection, and have outdone what I thought inimitable." "You are as little interested," answered the player, " in what I have faid of other poets; for d-n me if there are not many strokes, ay, whole scenes, in your last tragedy, which at least, equal Shakespeare. There is a delicacy of sentiment, a dignity of expression in it, which I will own, many of our gentlemen did not do adequate justice to. To confess the truth, they are bad enough, and I pity an author who is present at the murder of his works. -- Nay, it is but seldom that it can happen," returned the poet; the works of most modern authors, like deadborn children, cannot be murdered. It is fuch wretched, half-begotten, half-writ, lifelefs, fpiritlefs, low, grovelling stuff, that I almost pity the actor who is obliged to get it by heart, which must be almost as difficult to remember, as words in a language you do not understand." " I am fure," faid the player, " if the fentences have little meaning when they are writ, when they are spoken they have less. I know scarce one who ever lays an emphasis right, and much less adapts his action to his character. I have leen a tender lover in an attitude of fighting with his miftrefs, and a brave hero fuing to his enemy with his fword in his hand.—I don't care to abuse my profession, but rot me if, in my heart, I am not inclined to the poet's fide." " It

" in

" yo

" ne

" tre

avs t

mo

Ay

oet.

me

Yo

hils

wered

tha

just

play

mea

you

tow

mie

fear

lors

lors

I fu

you

e po

as m

pit a

give

the 1

defin

they was

licy

fecon

a fec

ever

fond

Vol.

" is rather generous in you than just," faid th poet; " and though I hate to speak ill of an " person's production, nay, I never do it, no " will -but yet, to do justice to the actors, wha " could Booth or Betterton have made of fuc " horrible stuff as Fenton's Mariamne, Frowd " Philotas, or Mallet's Eurydice, or those low " dirty, last dying speeches, which a fellow in the city, or Wapping, your Dillo or Lillo, what wa " his name, called Tragedies?" - " Ver " well," fays the player, " and pray what do you " think of fuch fellows as Quin and Delane, o " that face-making puppy young Cibber, that ill " look'd dog Macklin, or that faucy flut Mrs " Clive? What work would they make with you "Shakespeares, Otways, and Lees? How would " those harmonious lines of the last come from " their tongues?

"—No more; for I disdain

"All pomp when thou art by—far be the noise

"Of kings and crowns from us, whose gentle soul

"Our kinder fates have steer'd another way.

"Free as the forest birds we'll pair together,

"Without rememb'ring who our fathers were:

"Fly to the arbours, grots, and slow'ry meads,

"There in soft murmurs interchange our souls

"Together drink the crystal of the stream,

"Or taste the yellow fruit which autumn yields

"And when the golden evening calls us home,

"Wing to our downy nests, and sleep till morn

" Or how would this difdain of Otway?

" Who'd be that foolish fordid thing, call'd man?

"Hold, hold, hold," faid the poet, "do repeat that tender speech in the third act of my play which you made such a figure in." — "I would willingly," said the player, "but I have forgo it."—" Ay, you was not quite perfect enough

2

h

or ial

d'

w

va er

0

ill

lrs ou

ule

00

oil

oul

re:

ids,

uls

elds

ne,

orn

an!

epea

pla

oule

orgo

oug

64 1

"in it when you played it," cries the poet, " or "you would have had fuch an applause as was never given on the stage; an applause I was extremely concerned for your losing."—" Sure," is the player, " if I remember, that was his'd, more than any paffage in the whole play."-Ay, your speaking it was his'd," faid the oct. " My speaking it!" faid the player,-" I mean your not speaking it," said the poet. You was out, and then they his'd."— "They his'd, and then I was out, if I remember," anwered the player; and I must say this for myself, that the whole audience allow'd I did your part justice: fo don't lay the damnation of your play to my account." "I don't know what you mean by damnation," replied the poet. "Why, you know it was acted but one night," cried the layer. " No," faid the poet, " you and the whole town were enemies, the pit were all my enemies, fellows that would cut my throat, if the fear of hanging did not restrain them. All tailors, Sir, all tailors." - " Why should the tailors be fo angry with you?" cries the player. I suppose you don't employ so many in making your clothes." " I admit your jest," answered epoet; " but you remember the affair as well as myfelf; you know there was a party in the pit and upper gallery would not fuffer it to be given out again; though much, ay, infinitely the majority, all the boxes in particular,, were desirous of it; nay, most of the ladies swore they never would come to the house till it was acted again .- Indeed, I must own their policy was good, in not letting it be given out a fecond time; for the rafcals knew if it had gone a second night, it would have run sifty: for if ever there was diffress in a tragedy-I am not fond of my own performance: but if I should kell you what the best judges said of it-Nor was it VOL. II. Bb

baci

"

e (

te 11

" I

a fi

11 111

" qu

" fei

".co

ed ki wi

" vec

" wh

" litt

Yo

can

cui

you

lof to lf y

glac

frat.

can

you

us u

the did

which

lutel

he p

A fe

"intirely owing to my enemies neither, that it did
not fucceed on the stage as well as it hath since
among the polite readers; for you can't say it ha
justice done it by the performers."—" I think
(answered the player) the performers."

" (answered the player), the performers did the difference of it justice: for I am sure we were in difference enough, who were pelted with oranges a

" the last act; we all imagined it would have bee

" the last act of our lives."

The poet, whose fury was now raised, had just attempted to answer, when they were interrupted and an end put to their discourse by an accident which, if the reader is impatient to know, he must skip over the next chapter, which is a fort of cour terpart to this, and contains some of the best an gravest matters in the whole book, being a discours between Parson Abraham Adams and Mr. Josep Andrews.

### CHAP. XI.

Containing the exhortations of Parson Adams to he friend in afflistion; calculated for the instruction and improvement of the reader.

JOSEPH no fooner, came perfectly to himfed than perceiving his mistress gone, he bewalk her loss with groans, which would have pierce any heart but those which are possessed by son people, and are made of a certain composition, numlike shint in its hardness, and other properties for you may strike fire from them, which we dart through the eyes, but they can never distone drop of water the same way. His own, poyouth, was of a softer composition; and, at the words, "O my dear Fanny! O my love! shall "never, never see thee more?" his eyes overso ed with tears, which would have become any this but a hero. In a word, his despair was more of y to be conceived than related—

10

nl

d

5.2

ttd

int

nu

HII

ur

icp

2 4

ai

aile

rce

, n

widif

po

ial

Co

hi

Mr. Adams, after many groans, fitting with his back to Joseph, began thus in a forrowful tone : "You cannot imagine, my good child, that I en-" tirely blame these first agonies of your grief; for when misfortunes attack us by furprife, it must require infinitely more learning than you are ma-" fler of to refift them; but it is the business of a man and a Christian, to summon reason as quickly as he can to his aid; and she will pre-"fently teach him patience and fubmission. Be comforted therefore, child, I fay, be comforted. It is true you have lost the prettiest, kindest, loveliest, sweetest young woman, one with whom you might have expected to have lired in happiness, virtue and innocence; by whom you might have promifed yourfelf many "little darlings, who would have been the delight of your youth, and the comfort of your age. You have not only lost her, but have reason to fear the utmost violence which lust and power can inflict upon her. Now, indeed, you may eafily raife ideas of horror, which might drive you to defpair." - " O I shall run mad, (cries Joseph), O that I could but command my hands. to tear my eyes out, and my flesh off." ----If you would use them to such purposes, I am glad you can't, (answered Adams). I have stafixed your misfortune as strong as I possibly can; but, on the other fide, you are to confider you are a Christian; that no accident happens to us without the divine permission, and that it is the duty of a man and a Christian to submit. We did not make ourselves; but the same power which made us, rules over us, and we are ablo-Intely at his disposal: he may do with us what he pleases, nor have we any right to complain. A fecond reason against our complaint is our ignorance; for as we know not future events, fo B.5 2 " neither

" neither can we tell to what purpose any acciden " tends; and that which at first threatens us wit " evil, may, in the end, produce our good. " should indeed have said our ignorance is twofold " (but I have not at present time to divide proper " ly), for as we know not to what purpose any e vent is ultimately directed, fo neither can we as " firm from what cause it originally sprung. You " are a man, and confequently a finner; and this " may be a punishment to you for your fins; in " deed in this fense it may be esteemed as a good yea, as the greatest good, which fatisfies the an ger of Heaven, and averts that wrath which can " not continue without our destruction. Thirdly " our impotency of relieving ourselves, demon " ftrates the folly and abfurdity of our complaints " for whom do we refift? or against whom de w " complain, but a Power, from whose shafts no " armour can guard us, no speed can fly; " Power which leaves us no hope but in fubmission! " -- " O Sir, (cried Joseph), " all this is very " true, and very fine, and I could hear you al " day, if I was not fo grieved at heart as now. " am" " Would you take physic, (fays Adams) " when you are well, and refuse it when you are " fick? Is not comfort to be administred to the af-" flicted, and not to those who rejoice, or those who " are at eafe: -- "O you have not spoken one work " of comfort to me yet," returned Joseph. "No " (cried Adams), What am I then doing? wha " can I fay to comfort you?"- " O tell me, (cric " Joseph), that Fanny will escape back to my " arms, that they shall again inclose that lovely " creature, with all her fweetness, all her untainted " innocence about her." — " Why, perhaps, you " may, (cries Adams); but I can't promise you " what's to come. You must with perfect refigna " tion wait the event; if she be restored to you a " gain, it is your duty to he thankful, and fo it is

" Pr

" if

16 til

" an

" bu " wl

11 01

with which he m

dury " fig " for

" jne " yo replie " I a

" I e Adar teede

all the

which good all by migh

him lidea strefs

nies :

retur Ada: itl

ld

er

af or hi

in

od

an an

lly

on its

W

no

n

ery al

w I

is)

are af

vho

ord

0

ha

ric

my

rely

ted

vou

you

na

a

t is

i

Joseph, if you are wife, and " if the be not. "truly know your own interest, you will peaceably "and quietly fubmit to all the dispensations of "Providence, being thoroughly affured, that all "the misfortunes, how great foever, which hap-" pen to the righteous, happen to them for their " own good. - Nay, it is not your interest only, " but your duty to abstain from immoderate grief; " which, if you indulge, you are not worthy the " name of a Christian,"—He spoke these last words with an accent a little feverer than ufual; upon which Joseph begged him not to be angry, faying, he miltook him, if he thought he denied it was his dury; for he had known that long ago. "What " fignifies knowing your duty, if you do not per-"form it?" answered Adams. "Your knowledge " increases your guilt-O Joseph, I never thought " you had this stubbornness in your mind." Joseph replied, He fancied he misunderstood him, "which "I affore you, (fays he), you do, if you imagine "I endeavour to grieve; upon my foul I den't." Adams rebuked him for fwearing, and then promeded to enlarge on the folly of grief, telling him all the wife men and philosophers, even among. the heathens, had written against it, quoting several passages from Seneca, and the Consolation, which, though it was not Cicero's, was, he faid, as good almost as any of his works; and concluded all by hinting, that immoderate grief, in this cate, might incense that Power which alone could restore him his Fanny. This reason, or indeed rather the idea which it raised of the restoration of his mifirefs, had more effect than all which the parson had faid before, and for a moment abated his agonies: but when his fears sufficiently set before his tyes the danger that poor creature was in, his grief nturned again with repeated violence, nor could Adams in the least affuage it; though it may be B b 3 doubted

doubted in his behalf, whether Socrates himfelf

could have prevailed any better.

They remained fome time in filence; and groans and fighs iffued from them both; at length Joseph burst out in the following soliloguy:

Yes, I will bear my forrows like a man, But I must also feel them as a man. I cannot but remember fuch things were, And were most dear to me-

Adams asked him what stuff that was he repeated ?-To which he answered, they were some lines he had gotten by heart out of a play - " Ay, there " is nothing but heathenism to be learned from " plays," replied he - " I never heard of any " plays fit for a Christian to read, but Cato and the " the Conscious Lovers; and I must own, in the them a little, and inquire after the subject of their conversation.

## CHAP. XII.

More adventures, which we hope will as much please as surprise the reader.

NEITHER the facetious dialogue which paffed between the poet and the player, nor the grave and truly folemn discourse of Mr. Adams, will, we conceive, make the reader fufficient a-mends for the anxiety which he must have felt on the account of poor Fanny, whom we left in fo deplorable a condition. We shall therefore now pioceed to the relation of what happened to that beautiful and innocent virgin, after the fell into the wicked hands of the captain.

The

The

rize C

ntmost

oufe,

dup not on

on the

which,

hem,

At laff nd m

uxury

rould

er wl

old h

inder

iness,

oran

urnec

he m

ieved

s to the

you ger in

to " wil

wil

lin

an to

en d o he:

resei

it-

es re

m

ny he

he

eave eir

cafe

fed

aon de-

010 au-

the

The man of war having conveyed his charming rize out of the inn a little before day, made the most expedition in his power towards the Squire's oufe, where this delicate creature was to be offerdup a facrifice to the lust of a ravisher. He was not only deaf to all her bewailings and intreaties in the road, but accosted her ears with impurities. hich, having been never before accustomed to hem, the happily for herfelf very little understood. At last he changed his note, and attempted to sooth nd mollify her, by fetting forth the folendor and oxury which would be her fortune with a man who rould have the inclination, and power too, to give er whatever her utmost wishes could defire; and old her he doubted not but she would soon look inder upon him, as the instrument of her hapinefs, and despise that pitiful fellow, whom her igorance only could make her fond of. She anwered, she knew not whom he meant; she never was fond of any pitiful fellow. "Are you affronted, Madam, (says he), at my calling him so? but what better can be said of one in livery, notwithstanding your fondness for him?" She reurned, that she did not understand him, that he man had been her fellow-servant, and, she beeved, was as honest a creature as any alive; but s to her fondness for men-" I warrant ye, (cries the captain), we shall find means to perfuade you to be fond; and I advise you to yield to the gentle ones; for you may be affured that it is not in your power, by any struggles whatever, to to preserve your virginity two hours longer. It to preserve your virginity two hours longer. It will be your interest to consent; for the squire will be much kinder to you if he enjoys you willingly than by force." At which words she bean to call aloud for affiftance (for it was now oen day); but finding none, she lifted her eyes up heaven, and supplicated the divine affistance to The reserve her innocence. The captain told her, if

fhe perfifted in her vociferation, he would find means of stopping her mouth. And now the poo wretch, perceiving no hopes of fuccour, abandone herfelf to despair, and fighing out the name of lo feph! Joseph! a river of tears ran down her lovel cheeks, and wet the handkerchief which covered her bosom. A horseman now appeared in the road, upon which the captain threatened her vio lendy if the complained; however, the momen they approached each other, fhe begged him, will the utmost earnestness, to relieve a distressed crea ture who was in the hands of a ravisher. The fellow stopt at these words: but the captain affured him it was his wife, and that he was carrying her home from her adulterer: which fo fatisfied the fellow, who was an old one, (and perhaps a married one too), that he wished him a good journey and rode on. He was no fooner past, than the captain abused her violently for breaking his commands, and threatened to gagg her, when two more horsemen armed with pittols, came into the road just before them. She again solicited their affiftance, and the captain told the fame flory as before Upon which one faid to the other -- "That's a " charming wench ! Jack; I wish I had been in " the fellow's place, whoever he is " But the other, instead of answering him, cried out eagerly " Zounds, I know her:" and then turning to her faid, "Sure you are not Fanny Goodwill."- "la-" deed, indeed I am," fhe cried - "O John, " know you now-Heaven hath fent you to my af-" fiftance, to deliver me from this wicked man, " who is carrying me away for his vile purpofes -" O for God's fake rescue me from him." A fierce dialogue immediately enfued between the captain and these two men, who being both armed with pistols, and the chariot which they attended being now arrived, the captain faw both force and firata gem were vain, and endeavoured to make his e feape

to fice to the fed by fellow was a convergallar

fcape

The

this set of Book the n

mon

T

whic

and poet Adam above them riot ing f

of thear

is a whice Part of A

mag peop paid othe

Ada

d

00

lo

el

red

the

io

it

h

the

the

m

ore

iit.

re

s a

0

y

er In

af

ın,

rce

iin

d

ng t.i

e

fape; in which, however, he could not fucceed. The gentleman who rode in the chariot ordered it to ftop, and with an air of authority examined into the merits of the cause; of which being advertifed by Fanny, whose credit was confirmed by the sellow who knew her, he ordered the captain, who was all bloody from his encounter at the inn, to be conveyed as a prisoner behind the chariot, and very gallantly took Fanny into it; for, to say the truth, this gentleman (who was no other than the celebrated Mr. Peter Pounce, and who preceded the Lady Booby only a few miles, by setting out earlier in the morning) was a very gallant person, and loved a pretty girl better than any thing, besides his own money, or the money of other people.

The chariot now proceeded towards the inn, which, as Fanny was informed, lay in their way, and where it arrived at that very time when the poet and player were disputing below stair, and Adams and Joseph were discoursing back to back above: just at that period to which we brought them both in the two preceding chapters, the chariot ftopt at the door, and in an instant Fanny leaping from it, ran up to her Joseph.-O reader, conteive, if thou canft, the joy which fired the breafts of these lovers on this meeting; and if thy own heart doth not sympathetically affift thee in this conception, I pity thee fincerely from my own; for let the hard hearted villain know this, that there s a pleature in a tender fenfation beyond any which he is capable of tafting.

Peter being informed by Fanny of the presence of Adams, stopt to see him, and receive his homage; for, as Peter was an hypocrite, a fort of people whom Mr. Adams never saw through the one paid that respect to his seeming goodness which the other believed to be paid to his riches; hence Mr. Adams was so much his favourite, that he once lent him four pounds thirteen shillings and six-

pence

pence, to prevent his going to gaol, on no greate the no fecurity than a bond and judgement, which probably he would have made no use of, though the money had not been (as it was) paid exactly at the

It is not perhaps eafy to describe the figure of Adams; he had rifen in fuch a hurry, that he ha on neither breeches, garters, nor ftockings; no had he taken from his head a red spotted handker chief, which by night bound his wig, turned infide with to out, around his head. He had on his torn caffork and en and his great coat; but as the remainder of his caffock hung down below his great coat; fo did finall stripe of white, or rather whitish linen, ap pear below that, to which we may add the fever and N colours which appeared on his face, where a lon pifs-burnt beard ferved to retain the liquor of the from the mop. — This figure, which Fanny has delivered from his captivity, was no nooner spin tenge by Peter, than it disordered the composed gravity of his muscles; however, he advised him immediate, attached to make him self-slean, were would assent him. ately to make himfelf clean, nor would accept hi kind, homage in that pickle.

The poet and player no fooner faw the captain have in captivity, than they began to confider of the The own fafety, of which flight prefented itself as the caratronly means; they therefore both of them mounted that the poet's horse, and made the most expeditious recommendations.

treat in their power.

The hoft, who well knew Mr. Pounce, and Lad The host, who well knew Mr. Pounce, and Lad buld Booby's livery, was not a little surprised at this change of the scene, nor was his confusion much to dehelped by his wife, who was just now risen, and having heard from him the account of what has past, comforted him with a decent number of soo ome and blockheads; asked him why he did not confu han, her; and told him, he would never leave following

and he Jofa and fo mome whin

sot III in one revent

to fig!

Will

hreat

or th ould

theould

forgive

he nonfenfical dictates of his own numfeull, till the

adher family were ruined.

10

er

ck hi d

erz on th

ili'i

ad

Joseph being informed of the captain's arrival. and feeing his Fanny now in fafety, quitted her a moment, and, running down stairs, went directly whim, and, stripping off his coat, challenged him ofight; but the captain refused, faying, he did got understand boxing. He then grasped a cudgel mone hand, and catching the captain by the collar with the other, gave him a most severe drubbing. ad ended with telling him, he had now had fome

wenge for what his dear Fanny had fuffered.
When Mr. Pounce had a little regaled himfelf with fome provisions which he had in his chariot, and Mr. Adams had put on the best appearance his douths would allow him, Pounce ordered the capnin into his presence; for he said he was guilty of the said he may guilty of the said him: but the servants (whose appetite for reha mit him: but the tervants (whole appetite for reple tenge is foon fatisfied) being sufficiently contented
with the drubbing which Joseph had inflicted on
the him, and which was indeed of no very moderate
the hind, had suffered him to go off, which he did,
hreatening a severe revenge against Joseph, which
tail have never heard he thought proper to take.

The mistress of the house made her voluntary apthe sevence before Mr. Pounce, and with a thousand

the pearance before Mr Pounce, and with a thousand metries told him, She hoped his honour would paror the fake of his poor family; that indeed if he ould be ruined alone, she should be very willing of the te for because as why, his worship very well knew and the deserved it: but she had three poor small chilan hen, who were not capable to get their own living; ha and if her husband was fent to gaol, they must all ome to the parish; for she was a poor, weak woan, continually a breeding, and had no time to win tork for them. She therefore hoped his honour the wild take it into his worship's consideration, and forgive her husband this time; for she was sure he never intended any harm to man, woman, or child; and if it was not for that blockhead of his own, the man in some things was well enough; for she had had three children by him in less than three years, and was almost ready to cry out the fourth time. She would have proceeded in this manner much longer, had not Peter stopt her tongue, by telling her he had nothing to say to her husband, nor her neither. So, as Adams and the rest had assured her of forgiveness, she cried and curssed out of the room.

Mr. Pounce was defirous that Fanny should continue her journey with him in the chariot; but she absolutely refused, faying the would ride behind Joseph, on a horse which one of Lady Booby's fervants had equipped him with. But alas! when the horse appeared, it was found to be no other than that identical beast which Mr. Adams had left behind him at the inn, and which these honest fellows, who knew him, had redeemed. whatever horse they had provided for Joseph, they would have prevailed with him to mount none, no not even to ride before his beloved Fanny, till the parson was supplied; much less would be deprive his friend of the beaft which belonged to him, and which he knew the moment he faw, though Adams did not; however, when he was reminded of the affair, and told that they had brought the horse with them which he left behind, he answered— Bless me! and so I did.

Adams was very defirous that Joseph and Fanny should mount this horse, and declared he could very easily walk home. "If I walked alone," says he, "I would wager a shilling, "that the pedestrian outstripped the equestrian travellers: but as I intend to take the company of a pipe, peradventure I may be an hour later." One of the servants whispered Joseph

arm that and P twe ed,

fucl

Tof

put

Iwe

ful

ous cone to a hear wou had

for

his g havi his g him dam cept the from he p

char forw from on, a

tonc two

der a

Joseph to take him at his word, and suffer the old put to walk if he would: this proposal was answered with an angry look and a peremptory resultable by Joseph, who catching Fanny up in his arms, averred he would rather carry her home in that manner, than take away Mr. Adams's horse,

and permit him to walk on foot.

he d

m,

he

ree

th

by

id.

ad

ed

n.

he

nd

r-

he

an

e-

el-

ed

cy

no

he

97

nd

115

he

-

n-

ne

a-

g,

6-

10

ın

d

Perhaps, reader, thou hast feen a contest between two gentlemen, or two ladies quickly decided, tho' they have both afferted they would not eat such a nice morfel, and each infifted on the other's accepting it; but in reality both were very defirous to swallow it themselves. Do not therefore conclude hence, that this dispute would have come to a speedy decision: for here both parties were heartily in earnest, and it is very probable they would have remained in the inn-yard to this day, had not the good Peter Pounce put a stop to it; for finding he had no longer hopes of fatisfying his old appetite with Fanny, and being defirous of having some one to whom he might communicate his grandeur, he told the parfon he would convey him home in his chariot. This favour was by Adams, with many bows and acknowledgments, accepted, though he afterwards faid, He afcended the chariot rather that he might not offend, than from any defire of riding in it, for that in his heart he preferred the pedestrian even to the vehicular expedition. All matters being now fettled, the thariot in which rode Adams and Pounce, moved forwards; and Joseph having borrowed a pillion from the host, Fanny had just seated herself thereon, and had laid hold of the girdle which her lover wore for that purpose, when the wife beast, who toncluded that one at a time was fufficient, that two to one were odds, &c discovered much uneafinefs at his double load, and began to confider his hinder as his fore-legs, moving the direct contrary way to that which is called forwards: nor could Joseph. Vol. II. Cc

" It

" Wi

" ha

" m

riche

they

a ble

" ha

" is

" do

" is

" no

faid .

" ne

Peter

" far

" fif

" ala " Be

" go

" an

" ne

" ca

" in

" th

" fu

" an

" lu

" clo

" an

" wi

" w]

" Y

" I I

" of

with all his skill in horsemanship, persuade him advance; but without having any regard to the lovely part of the lovely girl which was on his back he used such agitations, that had not one of the me come in immediately to her affistance, she had, i plain English, tumbled backwards on the ground This inconvenience was prefently remedied by a exchange of horses: and then Fanny being again placed on her pillion, on a better-natured, an fomewhat a better fed beaft, the parfon's horfe finding he had no longer odds to contend with, greed to march: and the whole proceffion fet for wards for Booby-hall, where they arrived in a fe hours, without any thing remarkable happenin on the road, unless it was a curious dialogue be tween the parson and the steward; which, to u the language of a late apologist, a pattern to a biographers, " waits for the reader in the no " chapter."

### CHAP. XIII.

A curious dialogue which passed between Mr. Abraha Adams and Mr. Peter Pounce, better worth read ing than all the works of Colley Cibber and man others.

THE chariot had not proceeded far, before Mr. Adams observed it was a very fine day. "Ay, and a very fine country too," answere Pounce. "I should think so more," returne Adams, "if I had not lately travelled over the Downs, which I take to exceed this and a other prospects in the universe." "A sig so prospects," answered Pounce; one acre here worth ten there; and, for my own part, I have no delight in the prospect of any land but more own." "Sir," said Adams, "you can induly

" yourfelf with many fine prospects of that kind

"I thank God I have a little," replied the other, with which I am content, and envy no man: I "have a little, Mr. Adams, with which I do as "much good as I can." Adams answered, that riches without charity were nothing worth; for that they were a bleffing only to him who made them ableffing to others. "You and I," faid Peter, "have different notions of charity. I own, as it "is generally used, I do not like the word, nor "do I think it becomes one of us gentlemen; it " is a mean parson like quality: though I would " not infer many parsons have it neither." " Sir," faid Adams, " my definition of charity is a ge-"nerous disposition to relieve the distressed." "There is fomething in that definition," answered Peter, " which I like well enough; it is, as your " fay, a disposition, -and does not so much con-" fift in the act, as in the disposition to do it; but " alas, Mr. Adams who are meant by the diffreffed! " Believe me, the distresses of mankind are most-" ly imaginary, and it would be rather folly than "goodness to relieve them." Sure, Sir," replied Adams, " hunger and thirft, cold and nakedness, " and other diffresses which attend the poor, can "never be faid to be imaginary evils." "How " can any man complain of hunger," faid Peter, " in a country where fuch excellent fallads are "to be gathered in almost every field? or of "thirst where every river and stream produces " fuch delicious potations? and as for cold "and nakedness, they are evils introduced by " luxury and custom. A man naturally wants " clothes no more than a horse or any other ani-" animal; and there are whole nations who go " without them; but these are things, perhaps, "which you who do not know the world."-"You will pardon me, Sir," returned Adams; " I have read of the Gymnosophists." " A plague " of your Jehosaphats," cried Peter; " the great-

ran

fo

da

ere

rne

r th

1 2

g fe

re

ha

t m

lul

ind

eft fault in our constitution in the provision made of for the poor, except that perhaps made for " fome others. Sir, I have not an estate which doth not contribute almost as much again to the poor as to the land tax; and I do affure you I " expect to come myself to the parish in the end." To which Adams giving a diffenting smile, Peter thus preceeded: " I fancy, Mr. Adams, you are one " of those who imagine I am a lurp of money: " for there are many who, I fancy, believe, that " not only my pockets, but my whole clothes are " lined with bank bills; but I affure you, you are " all mistaken : I am not the man the world e-" fleems me. If I can hold my head above water, " it is all I can. I have injured myfelf by pur-" chasing. I have been too liberal of my money, " Indeed I fear my heir will find my affain "in a worse figuation than they are reputed to be " Ah! he will have reason to wish I had loved " money more, and land lefs. Pray, my good " neighbour, where should I have that quantity of " riches the world is fo liberal to bestow upon " me? where could I possibly, without I had " stole it, acquire such a treasure?" " Why, " truly," favs Adams, " I have been always of of your opinion; I have wondered, as well as " yourfelf, with what confidence they could report " fuch things of you, which have to me appeared " as mere impossibilities: for you know, Sir, and " I have often heard you fay it, that your wealth " is of your own acquifition; and can it be cre-" dible that in your short time you should have " amaffed fuch a heap of treasure as the " people will have you worth? Indeed had you inherited an estate like Sir Thomas Booby " which had descended in your family for many " generations, they might have had a colour for " their affertions." " Why, what do they fay " am worth?" cries Peter with a malicious fneer " Sir.

" fan " Na " opi

" Si

" way
" pos
" Mr
" has

" for " liev " fart " nor

" the " ver " the " acq

mas thre of i

and for you that

dam and me,

How veniot-do

apt o at alo irew a

anny ay, w.

"Sir." answered Adams, " I have heard some " aver you are not worth less than twenty thou-" fand pounds." At which Peter frowned. " Nay, Sir," faid Adams, " you ask me only the " opinion of others; for my own part, I have always denied it, nor did I ever believe you could " possibly be worth half that fum." " However, "Mr. Adams," faid he, fqueezing him by the " hand, I would not fell them all that I am worth " for double that fum: and as to what you be-"lieve, or they believe, I care not a fig, no not a fart. I am not poor, because you think me fo. "nor because you attempt to undervalue me in "the country. I know the envy of mankind very well, but I thank Heaven I am above them. It is true, my wealth is of my own acquisition. I have not an estate like Sir Thomas Booby, that has descended in my family through many generations: but I know heirs of fuch estates who are forced to travel about the country, like some people in torn cassocks. and might be glad to accept of a pitiful curacy, for what I know. Yes, Sir, as shabby fellows as yourfelf, whom no man of my figure, without that vice of good nature about him, would fuffer to ride in a chariot with him." "Sir," faid dams, " I value not your chariot of a rush: and if I had known you had intended to affront me, I would have walked to the world's end on foot ere I would have accepted a place in it. However, Sir, I will foon rid you of that inconvenience;" and fo faying, he opened the chaot-door, without calling to the coachman, and apt out into the high-way, forgetting to take his at along with him; which however Mr. Pounce new after him with great violence. Joseph and anny stopt to bear him company the rest of the ay, which was not above a mile, BOOK.

od

of

on

ny.

of as

or

red

ind

alth

cre

ave

refe

you

by

any

for

ay

eer

# BOOK IV.

#### CHAP. I.

The arrival of Lady Booby and the rest at Booky. hall.

HE coach and fix, in which Lady Book rode, overtook the other travellers as the entered the parish. She no fooner faw Joseph than her cheeks glowed with red, and immediately after became as totally pale. She had in her fur prife almost stopt her coach, but recollected her felf timely enough to prevent it. She entered the parish amidst the ringing of bells, and the acclama tions of the poor, who were rejoiced to fee their patroness returned after so long an absence, dur ing which time all her rents had been draughted to London, without a shilling being spent amon them, which tended not a little to their impo verishing: for if the court would be severely mil fed in fuch a city as London, how much more mul the absence of a person of great fortune be felt i a little country village, for whose inhabitants such a family finds a constant employment and supply and with the offals of whose table the infirm, aged and infant poor. are abundantly fed, with a gene rosity which hath scarce a visible effect on their be factor's pockets?

But if their interest inspired so public a joy interest countenance, how much more forcibly did the affection which they bore Parson Adams ope

ed al gent strat shoot ter t

happ N comperfe

his

perfo none A hour

in he leave hom

0

pect, the i of Jo in th imag The but parte

flum porti paint not t the p

in he

Shing a cider

rate upon all who beheld his return? They flocked about him, like dutiful children round an indulgent parent, and vied with each other in demonstrations of duty and love. The parson on his side shook every one by the hand, inquired heartily after the healths of all that were absent, of their children and relations, and expressed a satisfaction in his face, which nothing but benevolence, made happy by its objects, could insuse.

Nor did Joseph and Fanny want a hearty weltome from all who saw them. In short, no three persons could be more kindly received, as indeed none ever more deserved to be universally beloved.

Adams carried his fellow-travellers home to his house, where he insisted on their partaking whatever his wife, whom, with his children, he found in health and joy, could provide; where we shall leave them enjoying such perfect happiness over a homely meal, to view scenes of greater splendor, but infinitely less blifs.

b

e

pl

cl ur

er

ma

nei

ur

ite

on

po mif

nut

lt i

ucl

ply

ged

enc

be

int

di ope

rat

Our more intelligent readers will doubtless sufpect, by this fecond appearance of Lady Booby on the stage, that all was not ended by the dismission of Joseph; and, to be honest with them, they are in the right; the arrow had pierced deeper than the imagined, nor was the wound fo eafily to be cured. The removal of the object foon cooled her rage, but it had a different effect on her love; that departed with his person, but this remained lurking in her mind with his image. Reftless, interrupted flumbers, and confused horrible dreams were her portion the first night. In the morning Fancy painted her a more delicious scene, but to delude, not to delight her; for, before she could reach the promised happiness, it vanished, and left her to curse, not bless the vision.

She started from her sleep, her imagination being all on fire with the phantom, when her eyes actidentally glancing towards the spot where yester-

day

day the real Joseph had stood, that little circumstance raised his idea in the liveliest colours in her memory. Each look, each word, each gesture, rushed back on her mind with charms which all his coldness could not abate. Nay, she imputed that to his youth, his folly, his awe, his religion, to every thing, but what would instantly have produced contempt, want of passion for the fex, or that which would have roused her hatred,

want of liking to her.

Reflection then hurried her farther, and told her, the must fee this beautiful youth no more: nay, suggested to her, that she herself had difmiffed him for no other fault than probably that of too violent an awe and respect for herself; and which the ought rather to have efteemed a merit. the effects of which were besides so easily and surely to have been removed; she then blamed, she curfed the hafty rathness of her temper; her fury was vented all on herfelf, and Joseph appeared innocent in her eyes. Her passion at length grew so violent, that it forced her on feeking relief, and now the thought of recalling him : but pride forbade that; pride, which foon drove all fofter paffions from her foul, and represented to her the meanness of him she was so fond of. That thought foon began to obscure his beauties; contempt succeeded next, and then difdain, which prefently introduced her hatred of the creature who had given her fo much uneafiness. These enemies of Joseph had no fooner taken possession of her mind, than they infinuated to her a thousand things in his diffavour: every thing but dislike of her person; a thought, which, as it would have been intollerable to bear, fhe checked the moment it endeavoured to arise: revenge came now to her affistance; and the confidered her difmission of him strip'd, and without a character, with the utmost pleasure. She rioted in the feveral kinds of mifery which her imagination with viewe ed his Mr firefs dued

imag

ing to her la did Ma

" info
" had
" allo
" fo
" off

" mu
" hac
" wh
" tru
" you

" he
" ling
" way
" ever
" for
" mie

not a fa you turn I an

" all i
" Lad
" us t
-" A

the 70u

imagination suggested to her might be his fate, and with a smile composed of anger, mirth, and scorn, newed him in the rags in which her fancy had dress-

ed him.

d

t, co

d

.

ic

10

c-

1-

n

h

ın

ſ.

a

le

to

nd

nd

he

er

on

Mrs Slipflop being fummoned, attended her mifirefs, who had now in her own opinion totally fubdued this passion. Whilst she was dressing, she aked, if that fellow had been turned away according to her orders. Slipflop answered, she had told her ladyship fo, (as indeed she had) .- " And how "did he behave?" replied the lady. "Madam, (cries Slipflop), in fuch a manner as " infected every body who faw him. The poor lad "had but little wages to receive; for he constantly " allowed his father and nother half his income; " so that when your Lordyship's livery was strip'd "off, he had not wherewithal to buy a coat, and " must have gone naked, if one of the footmen "had not incommodated him with one: and "whilft he was standing in his shirt. (and to fay "truth, he was an amorous figure), being told "your Ladyship would not give him a character, "he fighed, and faid, He had done nothing wil-"lingly to offend; that for his part he should always give your Ladyship a good character where-"ever he went; and he prayed God to bless you, for you was the best of ladies, though his ene-" mies had fer you against him. I wish you had "not turned him away; for I believe you have not a faithfuller servant in the house."-" How came you then, (replied the lady), to advise me to turn him away?" " I, Madam, (faid slipflop), I am fure you will do me the justice to fay, I did all in my power to prevent it; but I faw your Ladyship was angry, and it is not the business of us upper servants to interfere in these occasions." "And was it not you, audacious wretch! (cried the Lady), who made me angry? Was it not your tittle tattle, in which I believe you belied

" the poor fellow, which incenfed me again " him? He may thank you for all that hath han " pened; and so may I for the loss of a good se " vant, and one who probably had more men " than all of you. Poor fellow! I am charme with his goodness to his parents. Why did no " you tell me of that, but suffer me to dismiss " good a creature without a character? I fee the " reason of your whole behaviour now, as well " your complaint; you was jealous of the wenches " I ealous! (faid Slipflop); I affure you I look u " on myfelf as his betters; I am not meat for " footman I hope." These words threw the la into a violent passion, and she fent Slipslop fro her presence, who departed toffing her nose, at crying, " Marry come up! there are fome peop " more jealous than I, I believe." Her lady fected not to hear the words, though in reality f did, and understood them too. Now enfued a cond conflict, fo like the former, that it might! vour of repetition to relate it minutely. It m fuffice to fay, that Lady Booby found good real to doubt whether fhe had fo absolutely conquen her passion, as she had stattered herself; and, order to accomplish it quite, took a resoluti more common than wife, to retire immediately to the country. The reader hath long ago feent arrival of Mrs. Slipflop, whom no pertness cou make her mistress resolve to part with; lately the of Mr. Pounce, her forerunners; and lastly, the of the lady herfelf,

The morning after her arrival, being Sund she went to church, to the great surprise of eve body, who wondered to see her Ladyship, be no very constant church-woman, there so suddly upon her journey. Joseph was likewise there and I heard it was remarked, that she fixed here on him much more than on the parson; but the believe to be only a malicious rumour. When

pray

prave

with a

" of r

" Go

had ar

in her

into,

n abo

directe

he wo

turing

tizing

hat m

d at t

The

Slipflo

dered .

arish.

f her

kewif

f whi

nd wh

oto he

er wil

1 disto

MR i

er ale.

egan i

after

this f

ie cou

), "

10 a

prayers were ended, Mr. Adams stood up, and with a loud voice pronounced, "I publish the banns of marriage between Joseph Andrews and Frances Goodwill, both of this parish," &c. Whether this had any effect on Lady Booby or no, who was then her pew, which the congregation could not see into, I could never discover; but certain it is, that habout a quarter of an hour she stood up, and directed her eyes to that part of the church where the women sat, and persisted in looking that way turing the remainder of the sermon, in so scruting a manner, and with so angry a countenance, that most of the women ware afraid she was offended at them.

The moment she returned home, she sent for slipslop into her chamber, and told her, she wondered what that impudent fellow Joseph did in that wish. Upon which Slipslop gave her an account of her meeting Adams with him on the road, and kewise the adventure with Fanny. At the relation of which the lady often changed her countenance; and when she had heard all, she ordered Mr. Adams not her presence, to whom she behaved as the reader will see in the next chapter.

I

m af

er

ļ

ıti

nt

tl

nd

be

idd

her

er e

t th

en

pray

# CHAP. II.

dislogue between Mr. Abraham Adams and the Lady Booby.

MR. Adams was not far off; for he was drinking her ladyship's health below in a cup of trale. He no sooner came before her, than she the san in the following manner: "I wonder, Sir, after the many great obligations you have had to this family," (with all which the reader hath, in the course of this history, been minutely acquaintly, "that you will ungratefully show any respect to a fellow who hath been turned out of it for

11 1

" []

40

" Y " It

" pe

" de

" H

" n

" (a W CD

" uj

" po " VC

" de " pu

" rea

"It

" an

" be

" am

" (ar

" to

" yer

" gai " La

" (0) " wit

" mo

" you

" tur

" eve

" bein " Go

" poo

" dy " the

Vo

" his misdeeds. Nor doth it, I can tell you, Sin " become a man of your character, to run abou " the country with an idle fellow and wench. In " deed, as for the girl, I know no harm of her " Slipflop tells me she was formerly bred up in m " house, and behaved as she ought, till she han " kered after this fellow, and he spoiled her. Nav " fhe may still, perhaps, do very well, if he wi " let her alone. You are therefore doing a mon " ftruous thing, in endeavouring to procure " match between these two people, which will b " to the ruin of them both." --- " Madam, (far " Adams), if your Ladyship will but hear m " fpeak, I protest I never heard any harm of Mr " Joseph Andrews; if I had, I should have con " rected him for it; for I never have, nor will en " courage the faults of those under my cure. A " for the young woman, I affure your Ladyship " have as good an opinion of her as your Ladythi " yourfelf, or any other can have. She is the " sweetest tempered, honestest, worthiest youn " creature; indeed, as to her beauty, I do no " commend her on that account, though all me " allow she is the handsomest woman, gentle of " fimple, that ever appeared in the parish." "You " are very impertinent, (fays she), to talk such " fulfome stuff to me. It is mighty becoming " truly, in a clergyman to trouble himself abou " handsome women, and you are a delicate judg " of beauty, no doubt! A man who hath lived a " his life in fuch a parish as this, is a rare judge of " beauty. Ridiculous! Beauty indeed!—a coun " try wench a beauty !- I shall be fick whenever " hear beauty mentioned again. - And fo thi " wench is to flock the parish with beauties, " hope-But, Sir, our poor is numerous enoug " already; I will have no more vagabonds fettle " here." " Madam, (says Adams). you Ladyshi " is offended with me, I protest, without any rea er for

" fon. This couple were desirous to confummate "long ago, and I diffuaded them from it; nay, I " may venture to fay, I believe I was the fole cause " of their delaying it." " Well, (fays she) and " you did very wifely and honeftly too, nothwith-" standing she is the greatest beauty in the parish." -" And now, Madam, (continued he), I only "perform my office to Mr. Joseph." - "Pray, "don't mifter fuch fellows to me," cries the Lady. "He, (faid the parson), with the confent of Fan-"ny, before my face, put in the banns." " 'es, " (answered the lady), I suppose the flut is forward " enough: Slipflop tells me how her head runs "upon fellows: that is one of her beauties, I sup-" pofe. But if they have put in the banns, I defire "you will publish them no more without my or-"ders." " Madam, (cries Adams), if any one " puts in fufficient caution, and affigns a proper "reason against them, I am willing to surcease." "I tell you a reason, (says she), he is a vagabond, " and he shall not settle here, and bring a nest of " beggars into the parish; it will make us but little "amends that they will be beauties." "Madam, " (answered Adams), with the utmost submission " to your Ladyship, I have been informed by Law-"yer Scout, that any person who serves a year, " gains a fettlement in the parish where he ferves." " Lawyer Scout, (replied the lady), is an impudent " coxcomb; I will have no Lawyer Scout interfere " with me. I repeat to you again, I will have no " more incumbrances brought on us: fo I desire "you will proceed no farther." "Madam, (re-" turned Adams), I would obey your Ladyship in " every thing that is lawful; but furely the parties " being poor is no reason against their marrying. " God forbid there should be any such law. The " poor have little share enough of this world alrea" dy; it would be barbarous indeed to deny them the common privileges and innocent enjoyments VOL. II. Dd

n

e

ic

ng

ou dg

al

un

chi

5,

lig

tle

on

" which Nature indulges to the animal creation." " Since you understand yourself no better, (crie " the lady), nor the respect due from such as you " to a woman of my distinction, than to alread my ears by fuch loofe discourse, I shall mention but one short word; it is my orders to you, that you publish these banns no more; and if you " dare, I will recommend it to your master, the " Doctor, to discard you from his service : I will Sir, notwithstanding your poor family; and " then you and the greatest beauty in the parish " may go and beg together." " Madam, (an " fwered Adams), I know not what your Lady " flip means by the terms mafter and fervice. am in the fervice of a mafter, who will never " discard me for doing my duty; and if the Doc " tor (for indeed, I have never been able to pa " for a licence), thinks proper to turn me from m " cure, God will provide me, I hope, another, " at least, my family, as well as myself, have " hands; and he will prosper, I doubt not, ou " endeavours to get our bread honeftly with them . Whilst my conscience is pure, I shall never feat " what man can do unto me." - "I condemn m " humility, (faid the lady) for demeaning mysl to converse with you so long. I shall take other " measures; for I see you are a consederate with . them. But the fooner you leave me the better and I shall give orders that my doors may no " longer be open to you. I will fuffer no parfon " who run about the country with beauties to b " entertained here." " Madam (faid Adams), " shall enter into no persons doors against their " will; but I am affured, when you have inquired " farther into this matter, you will appland, no " blame my proceeding; and fo I humbly takem " leave:" which he did with many bows, or at leaf many attempts at a bow.

CHAP

11

IN

dlin

detc

ally,

ed a

forn

law.

" n

" fe

11 11

lawy

law.

yer,

that

any

" ye

" OI

" fe

" fin

" fe

" in

6 W

" m

" no

" fa

" in

" do

" MI

" fu

" to

" to

ar an

### CHAP. III.

What possed between the Lady and Lawyer Scout.

ia

h

m

T

av

OU

ear

m

61

he

rit

er

non

b

),

rei

110

eaf

IN the afternoon the lady fent for Mr. Scout, whom the attacked most violently for intermed dling with her fervants; which he denied, and indeed with truth; for he had only afferted accidentally, and perhaps rightly, that a year's fervice gained a fettlement; and fo far he owned he might have formerly informed the parfon, and believed it was law. " I am refolved, (faid the lady), to have " no discarded servants of mine settled here; and " fo, if this be your law, I shall fend to another "lawyer." Scout faid, If the fent to a hundred lawyers, not one or all of them could alter the law. The utmost that was in the power of a lawger, was to prevent the law's taking effect; and that he himself could do for her ladyship as well as any other: " and I believe, (fays he), Madam, " your Ladyship not being conversant in these mat-"ters, hath mistaken a difference; for I afferted " only, that a man who ferved a year was fettled. "Now there is a material difference between being " fettled in law, and fettled in fact; and as I at-" firmed generally he was fettled, and law is pre-" ferable to fact, my fettlement must be understood "in law, and not in fact. And suppose, Madam, " we admit he was fettled in law, what use will they " make of it? how doth that relate to fact? He is "not settled in fact; and if he be not settled in " fact, he is not an inhabitant; and if he is not an "inhabitant, he is not of this parish; and then un-" doubtedly he ought not to be published here : for "Mr. Adams hath told me your Ladyship's plea-" fure, and the reason, which is a very good one, " to prevent burdening us with the poor: we have " too many already; and I think we ought to have an act to hang or transport half of them. If Dd 2

" fu

" Fi

a na

" qt

" no

" fe

" fu

" la

" bo

" W

" th

" kr

" W

" W

" CI

" Y

" fu

" tic

" as

a tr

" is

" ho

" in

" L

" W

" ft

" fo

" is

" m

an e

unde

part

out :

take

men

T

" we can prove, in evidence, that he is not fettled " in fact, it is another matter. What I faid to " Mr. Adams, was on a supposition that he was " fettled in fact; and indeed, if that was the cafe. " I should doubt"-" Don't tell me your facts and " your ifs, (faid the lady), I don't understand your " gibberish : you take too much upon you, and " are very impertinent in pretending to direct in " this parish; and you shall be taught better, I " affure you, you shall. But as to the wench I " am refolved the shall not fettle here; I will not " fuffer fuch beauties as these to produce children " for us to keep." - " Beauties indeed! your La-" c'yship is pleased to be merry," answered Scout. -- "Mr. Adams described her fo to me," faid the lady. - " Pray what fort of dowdy is it, Mr. " Scout?" - " The ugliest creature almost I ever " beheld, a poor dirty drab, your Ladyship never " faw fuch a wretch." - " Well, but dear Mr. " Scout, let her be what she will, - these ugly wo-" men will bring children, you know; fo that we " must prevent the marriage." - "True, Madam, " (replied Scout), for the subsequent marriage cooperating with the law, will carry law into fact. "When a man is married, he is fettled in fact; " and then he is not removeable. I will fee Mr. " Adams, and I make no doubt of prevailing " with him. His only objection is doubtlefs, that " he shall lose his fee; but that being once made " eafy, as it shall be, I am confident no farther " objection will remain. No, no, it is impossible: " but your Ladyship can't discommend his unwil-" linguess to depart from his fee. Every man " ought to have a proper value for his fee, As to " the matter in question, if your Ladyship please " to employ me in it, I will venture to promife you " fucceis. The laws of this land are not fo vul-" gar, as to permit a mean fellow to contend with " one of your Ladyship's fortune. We have one 60 fure

d

0

S

đ

r

d

n

I

ot

n

1t.

d

1.

77

r

r.

0.

n,

o•

;

r.

ig

at

er

e:

m

to

(e

u

1.

h

bn

re

" fure card, which is to carry him before Justice " Frolic, who, upon hearing your Ladyship's "name, will commit him without any farther " questions. As for the dirry flut, we shall have " nothing to do with her; for if we get rid of the " fellow, the ugly jade will"- " Take what mea-" fures you pleafe, good Mr. Scout, (answered the "lady), but I wish you could rid the parish of "both; for Slipflop tells me fuch stories of this " wench, that I abhor the thoughts of her; and " though you fay she is such an ugly flut, yet you "know, dear Mr. Scout, these forward creatures " who run after men, will always find fome as for-" ward as themselves: so that, to prevent the in-" crease of beggars, we must get rid of her." -"Your Ladyship is very much in the right, (an-" fwered Scout). but I am afraid the law is a little " deficient in giving us any fuch power of preven-"tion; however, the justice will stretch it as far " as he is abie, to oblige your Ladythip. To fay " truth, it is a great bleffing to the country that he " is in the commission: for he hath taken several " poor off our hands that the law would never lay "hold on. I know fome justices who make as " much of committing a man to Bridewell, as his "Lordship at 'fize would of hanging him; but it " would do a man good to fee his worship, our ju-"ftice, to commit a fellow to Bridewell; he takes " fo much pleasure in it; and when once we ha" " um there; we feldom hear any more o' um. He " is either starved or ate up by vermin in a " month's time."-Here the arrival of a visitor put an end to the conversation; and Mr. Scout having undertaken the cause, and promised success, departed.

This Scout was one of those fellows who, without any knowledge of the law, or being bred to it, take upon them, in defiance of an act of parliament, to act as lawyers in the country, and are cal-

Dd 3

led

led fo. They are the pefts of fociety, and a fcan. dal to a profession to which indeed they do not belong and which owes to fuch kind of rafcallions the ill will which weak perfons bear towards it. With this fellow, to whom a little before the would not have condescended to have spoken, did a certain passion for Joseph, and the jealousy and disdain of poor innocent Fanny, betray the Lady Booby into a familiar discourse, in which she inad. vertently confirmed many hints, with which Slip. flop, whose gallant he was, had pre acquainted him; and whence he had taken an opportunity to affert those severe falsehoods of little Fanny, which possibly the reader might not have been well able to account for, if we had not thought proper to give him this information.

### CHAP. IV.

A Short chapter, but very full of matter; particularly the arrival of Mr. Borby and his Lady.

A LL that night, and the next day, the Lady Booby passed with the utmost anxiety; her mind was distracted, and her foul toffed up and down by many turbulent and opposite passions. She loved, hated, pitied, fcorned, admired, despised the fame person by fits, which changed in a very fhort interval. On Tuefday morning, which happened to be a holiday, she went to church, where, to her furprise. Mr. Adams published the banns again, with as audible a voice as before. It was lucky for her, that as there was no fermon, she had an immediate opportunity of returning home to vent her rage, which she could not have concealed from the congregation five minutes; indeed it was not then very numerous, the affembly confifting of no more than Adams, his clerk, his wife, the lady, and one of her fervants. At her return the

met i

" O

" be

u F

" in

" no

" de

" m

" da

" a

" de

11 01

" fig

" To

" fw

" to " tu was

men

the v

remo PUZ2

when ferva

phev

cond

fentl

as w

the i

rupt

exec

the f

men

T

mad

lady

but I

the Tayir d

0

0

20

iy

dy

er

nd'

fed

ery

ap-

was

had

ent

not

gof

the

fhe met met Slipflop, who accosted her in these words: -" O Meam, what doth your Ladyship think? To " be fure Lawyer Scout hath carried Joseph and " Fanny both before the Justice. All the parish are "in tears, and fay they will be hanged; for " no body knows what it is for."-"I suppose they " deferve it, (fays the lady). What dost thou " mention fuch wretches to me?" "O dear Ma-"dam, (answered Slipslop), is it not a pity such " a graceless young man should die a virulent " death? I hope the judge will take commensuration " on his youth. As for Fanny, I don't think it " fignifies much what becomes of her: and if poor " Joseph hath done any thing, I could venture to " swear she traduced him to it. Few men ever come " to fragrant punishment, but by those nasty crea-" tures, who are a scandal to our feet." The lady was no more pleased at this news, after a moment's reflection, than Slipflop herfelf: for though the wished Fanny far enough, she did not defire the removal of Joseph, especially with her. She was puzzled how to act, or what to fay on this occasion. when a coach and fix drove into the court, and a servant acquainted her with the arrival of her nephew Booby and his lady. he ordered them to be conducted into a drawing-room, whether she prefently repaired, having composed her countenance as well as the could; and being a little fatisfied that the wedding would by these means be at least interrupted, and that she should have an opportunity to execute any refolution the might take, for which the faw herfelf provided with an excellent instrument in Scout.

The Lady Booby apprehended her fervant had made a mistake, when he mentioned Mr Booby's lady; for she had never heard of his marriage; but how great was her surprise, when, at her entering the room, her nephew presented his wife to her saying, "Madam, this is that charming Pamela, of whom

" whom I am convinced you have heard fo much." The lady received her with more civility than he expected; indeed with the utmost; for the was perfeetly polite, por had any vice inconfistent with good-breeding. They passed some little time in ordinary discourse, when a servant came and whis. pered Mr. Booby, who presently told the ladies he must defert them a little on some business of confequence; and as their difcourfe during his absence would afford little improvement or entertainment to the reader, we will leave them for a while to attend Mr. Booby.

### CHAP. V.

Containing justice-business : curious precedents of depositions, and other matters necessary to be perused by all justices of the peace and their clerks.

THE young squire and his lady were no sooner alighted from their coach, than the fervants began to inquire after Mr. Joseph, from whom they faid their lady had not heard a word, to her great ing his furprise, since he had left Lady Booby's. Upon derk, this they were instantly informed of what had late ly happened, with which they hastily acquainted their mafter, who took an immediate refolution to go himself, and endeavour to restore his Pamela her brother, before the even knew the had loft him.

The justice before whom the criminals were carried, and who lived within a short mile of the la dy's house, was luckily Mr. Booby's acquaintance by his having an estate in his neighbourhood. Or dering therefore his horses to his coach, he set ou for the judgment feat, and arrived when the justice had almost finished his business. He was conduct ed into a hall, where he was acquainted that his Worship would wait on him in a moment; for he had only a man and a woman to commit to Bride

feph a cer

well .

minu

cing

was t

broug

patico

mer a

peopl

wer:

" Br

" cri

" ple " the

" thi

" re &

Poor

the the

but th

lenten " igne

" then

great (

here it

The de

Tro

Majo

T

this the c

of th

there

well first. As he was now convinced he had not a minute to lofe, he infifted on the fervant's introduing him directly into the room where the justice was then executing his office, as he called it. Being brought thither, and the first compliments being miled between the Squire and his Worship, the former asked the latter what crime those two young cople had been guilty of. "No great crime," anwered the justice. "I have only ordered them to "Bridewell for a month." But what is their "crime?" repeated the Squire. " Larceny, an't "please your Honour," says Scout. " Ay," says "the justice, " a kind of felonious larcenous "thing. I believe I must order them a little cor"rection too, a little stripping and whipping." Poor Fanny, who had hitherto supported all with he thoughts of Joseph's company, trembled at hat found; but indeed without reason, for none but the devil himself would have executed such a intence on her). "Still." faid the Squire, "I am ignorant of the crime, the fact I mean." "Why "there it is in peaper," answered the justice, shewing him a deposition, which, in the absence of his derk, he had writ himself, of which we have, with reat difficulty, procured an authentic copy: and here it follows verbaim et literatim.

er

nts

at

00

te

ted

her

ar la

or-

out

tice

hi

h

ide

wel

The deposition of James Scout layer and Thomas Trotter yeoman, taken before mee, one of his Majesty's justasses of the peace for Zumersetshire.

THESE deponants saith, and first Thomas
Trotter for himself saith, that on the of
this instant October, being Sabbath dey, betwinthe ours of 2 and 4 in the afternoon, he zeed Joseph Andrews and Francis Goodwill walk akross
a certane selde belunging to Layer Scout, and out
of the path which ledes thru the said selde, and
there he zede Joseph Andrews with a nife cut

order

had o

purpo

lefep

his le

linen

himse

civilit

as dec the S

talkin

had fl

bethe

from

dered

for h

nance

her to

sono.

Willin

had I

at the

plifh

Smin

po:A

ly bef

fince

fettle

wher

that !

if the

fquee

to of

who

" one hafel-twig, of the value, as he believes, o 3 half-pence, or thereabouts; and he faith, tha " the faid Francis Goodwill was likewife walking on the grafs out of the faid path in the faid felde " and did receive and karry in her hand the fair " twig, and fo was comfarting, eading and abating " to the faid Joseph therein. And the faid lame " Scout for himself says, that he verily believes the " faid twig to be his own proper twig," &c.

" Jefu!" faid the Squire, " would you commi "two persons to Bridewell for a twig?" "Yes faid the laywer, "and with great lenity too; for i " we had called it a young tree, they would have " been both hanged."-" Harkee, (fays the justice " taking afide the Squire), I should not have been " fo fevere on this occasion, but Lady Booby do " fires to get them out of the parish: fo Lawye " Scout will give the conftable orders to let then " run away, if they please; but it seems they in " tend to marry together, and the lady hath no o " ther means, as they are legally fettled there, to " prevent their bringing an incumbrance on he " own parish." " Well, (said the Squire), I wi " take care my aunt shall be fatisfied in this point " and likewife I promife you, Joseph here shall " never be any incumbrance on her. I shall be ob " liged to you therefore, if instead of Bridewel " you will commit them to my custody."- "O, to " be fure, Sir, if you defire it," answered the justice and without more ado Joseph and Fanny were dell vered over to Squire Booby, whom Joseph ver well knew, but little guessed how nearly he was re ly, as lated to him. The justice burnt his mittimus; the offer constable was fent about his business; the lawyer for the made no complaint for the want of justice; and the prisoners, with exulting hearts, gave a thousand thanks to his honour Mr Booby; who did not in tend their obligations to him should cease here; so orderin

ni

es i

lv

ce

de

ye

en

in

0

te

wi

int hal

ob

wel

), to ice

dth fanc

fo

rin

ordering his man to produce a cloak bag, which he had caused to be brought from Lady Booby's on purpose, he defired the justice that he might have Meph with him into a room; where, ordering his lervant to take out a fuit of his own cloaths, with finen and other necessaries, he left Joseph to dress hinself, who, not yet knowing the cause of all this wility, excused his accepting such a favour, as long s decently he could. Whilft Joseph was dreffing, the Squire repaired to the justice, whom he found alking with Fanny; for, during the examination, the had flopped her hat over her eyes, which were also bethed in tears, and had by that means, concealed from his Worthip what might, perhaps, have rendered the arrival of Mr. Booby unnecessary, at least for herfelf. The justice no sooner saw her countenance cleared up, and her bright eyes shining thro' her tears, than he fecretly curfed himfelf for having once thought of Bridewell for her. He would wilingly have fent his own wife thither, to have had Fanny in her place, And, conceiving almost a the fame instant defires and schemes to accomsplift them, he employed the minutes, while the how forry he was for having treated her fo roughbefore he knew her merit; and told her, that face Lady Booby was unwilling that she should settle in her parish, she was heartily welcome to his, where he promised her his protection; adding, that he would take Joseph and her into his family, if the liked; which affurance he confirmed with a specific fueeze by the hand. She thanked him very kindly, and faid, She would acquaint Joseph with the offer, which he would certainly be glad to accept; for that Lady Booby was angry with them both; though she did not know either had done any thing to offend her; but imputed it to Madam Slipslop, t in who had always been her enemy. The

" fa

u th

fayir

requ

ing I

foon

mast

his

with

by it

but h

now

migh

vant,

that

vaft

lue h

made

know first p

with !

ping Th

and

in the

arriv

" vii

" ref

" ob

" tru

" is 1

pir

or of

" dre

v me

he

The Squire now returned, and prevented an farther continuance of this conversation; and the justice, out of a pretended respect to his guest, but in reality from an apprehension of a rival, (for he knew nothing of his marriage), ordered Fanny into the kitchen, whither she gladly retired; nor dithe Squire, who declined the trouble of explaining

the whole matter, oppose it.

It would be unneceffary, if I was able, which in deed I am not, to relate the conversation between thefe two gentlemen, which rolled, as I have bee informed, entirely on the subject of herse-racing Joseph was foon dreffed in the plainest dress l could find, which was a blue coat and breeche with a gold edging, and a red waistcoat with the fame: and as this fuit, which was rather too large for the Squire,, exactly fitted him; fo he becam it so well, and looked so genteel, that no perso would have doubted its being as well adapted to h quality as his shape; nor have suspected, as or might, when my Lord —, or Sir —, Mr. — appear in lace or embroidery, that the tailor's man wore those clothes home on his back which he should have carried under his arm.

which he should have carried under his arm.

The Squire now took leave of the justice, an calling for Fanny, made her and Joseph, again their wills, get into the coach with him, which then ordered to drive to Lady Booby's.—It has moved a few yards only when the Squire asked Joseph, if he knew who that man was crossing the field? "for," added he, "I never saw one take such strides before." Joseph answered eagerly O Sir, it is Parson Adams."—"O la! indeed and so it is," said Fanny, "poor man, he is considered to do what he could for us. Well, he is the worthiest best-natured creature"—"Ay," said Joseph, God bless him: for there is no such another in the universe."—"The best

" creature living fure," cries Fanny." " Is he

n

d

ee

e

in

H

he

th

am

río h

on , o

th

acl

an

ain

h h

11:0

3 th

tal

erl

leec

con

sth

fai

be

he far

" fays the Squire, " then I am refolved to have " the best creature living in my coach;" and fo faving, he ordered it to stop, whilst Joseph, at his request, hollowed to the parson, who well knowing his voice, made all the hafte imaginable, and foon came up with them. He was defired by the mafter, who could fcarce refrain from laughter at his figure, to mount into the coach, which he, with many thanks, refused, saying he could walk by its fide, and he'd warrant he kept up with it: but he was at length over-prevailed on. The Squire now acquainted Joseph with his marriage; but he might have spared himself that labour; for his fervant, whilst Joseph was dressing, had performed that office before. He continued to express the wast happiness he enjoyed in his fifter, and the vahe he had for all who belonged to her. Joseph made many bows, and expressed as many acknowledgments; and Parson Adams, who now first perceived Joseph's new apparel, burst into tears with joy, and fell to rubbing his hands and fnapping his fingers, as if ne had been mad.

They were now arrived at the Lady Booby's: and the Squire defiring them to wait a moment in the court, walked in to his aunt, and calling her out from his wife, acquainted her with Joseph's arrival; faying, " Madam, as I have married a "virtuous and worthy woman, I am refolved to "own her relations, and shew them all a proper " respect; I shall think myself therefore infinitely " obliged to all mine, who will do the fame. It is "true her brother hath been your fervant, but he " is now become my brother; and I have one hap-" piness, that neither his character, his behaviour, or appearance give me any reason to be ashamed of calling him fo. In short, he is now below dressed like a gentleman, in which light I intend "he shall hereafter be seen: and you will oblige me beyond expression, if you will admit him to VOL. II. Ee

" be of our party; for I know it will give great
" pleasure to my wife, though she will not mention it."

This was a stroke of fortune beyond the Lad Booby's hopes or expectation; the answered him eagerly, " Nephew, you know how eafily I am " prevailed on to do any thing which Joseph An-" drews defires .--- Phoo I mean which you de " fire me; and as he is now your relation I canno " refuse to entertain him as such." The Squire told her, he knew his obligation to her for he compliance; and going three steps, returned and told her -- he had one more favour, which he be lieved she would easily grant, as she had accorded him the former. "There is a young woman"-" Nephew," fays the, "don't let my good natur " make you defire, as is too commonly the cafe. " to impose on me; nor think, because I have with fo much condefcension, agreed to suffer " your brother-in-law to come to my table, that " will fubmit to the company of all my own fer " vants, and all the dirty trollops in the country." " Madam," answered the Squire, " I believe you never saw this young creature. I never beheld " fuch fweetness and innocence, joined with such " beauty, and withal fo genteel." " Upon my " foul I won't admit her," replied the lady in paffion; "the whole world fhan't prevail on me " I resent even the desire as an affront, and"--The Squire, who knew her inflexibility, interrupt ed her, by asking pardon, and promising not to mention it more. He then returned to Joseph and she to Pamela. He took Joseph aside, and told he would carry him to his fifter; but could not prevail as yet for Fanny. Joseph begged that he might fee his fifter alone, and then be with his Fanny; but the Squire knowing the pleafure hi wife would have in her brother's company, would not admit it, telling Joseph, there would be no thing

ed wi

thing

the v

leen Tole

broth

ing I

fore atten

Of

their They pleaf flame the a to fer draw the a

nor at the cially raptu

who fuch ding hufb

wom

thing in so short an absence from Fanny, whilst she was assured of her safety; adding, he hoped he could not easily quit a sister whom he had not seen so long, and who so tenderly loved him.—

Joseph immediately complied: for, indeed, no brother could love a sister more: and recommending Fanny, who rejoiced that she was not to go before Lady Booby, to the care of Mr Adams, he attended the Squire up stairs, whilst Fanny repaired with the parson to his house, where she thought herself secure of a kind reception,

n

le

ire

ur fe

ne.

fier

at

er

y.

OU

eld

uch

my

n

me

--

ipt

t to

ph

and

pul

tha

hi

hi

oul

no

ning

## CHAP. VI.

Of which you are defired to read no more than you like.

THE meeting between Joseph and Pamela was not without tears of joy on both fides: and their embraces were full of tenderness and affection. They were however regarded with much more pleasure by the nephew than by the aunt, to whose fame they were fuel only; and being affifted by the addition of dress, which was indeed not wanted to let off the lively colours in which Nature had drawn health, strength, comeliness and youth. In the afternoon Joseph, at their own request, entertained them with an account of his adventures; nor could Lady Booby conceal her diffatisfaction at those parts in which Fanny was concerned, espetially when Mr. Booby launched forth into fuch rapturous praises of her beauty. She faid, applying to her niece, that she wondered her nephew, who had pretended to marry for love, should think such a subject proper to amuse his wife with; adding, that for her part, she should be jealous of a husband, who spoke so warmly in praise of another woman. Pamela answered, indeed she thought the had cause; but it was an instance of Mr. Booby's Ee 2

the .

even

the a

derf

" da

aniw " do

Slipf

to pi

have

the p

" flo

Slipf

hewe

ing '

fome

etern " Re

" ex

" gu

" M

" fel

the la

" da

" A

" Is

" a

" ha

" ed

" un

" lec

" he

" fea

tu

de

SI

Booby's aptness to see more beauty in women than they were mistresses of. At which words both the women fixed their eyes in two looking-glaffes. and Lady Booby replied, that men were, in the general, very ill judges of beauty; and then, whilf both contemplated only their own faces, they paid a crofs compliment to each other's charms. When the hour of rest approached, which the lady of the house deferred as long as decently she could, she informed Joseph (whom for the future we shall call Mr. Joseph, he having as good a title to that appellation as many others, I mean that incontest. ed one of good clothes) that she had ordered a bed to be provided for him. He declined this favour to his utmost; for his heart had long been with his Fanny; but she infifted on his accepting it, alledge ing, that the parish had no proper accommodation for fuch a person as he was now to esteem himself. The Squire and his lady both joining with her, Mr. Joseph was at last forced to give o ver his defign of vifiting Fanny that evening, who, on her fide, as impatiently expected him till midnight, when, in complaifance to Mr Adams's family, who had fat up two hours out of respect to her, she retired to bed, but not to sleep; the thought of her love kept her waking, and his not returning according to his promife filled her with uneafiness; of which however, she could not assign any other cause than merely that of being absent from him.

Mr. Joseph rose early in the morning, and visited her in whom his soul delighted. She no sooner heard his voice in the parson's parlour, than she leapt from her bed, and dressing herself in a sew minutes, went down to him. They passed two hours with inexpressible happiness together, and then having appointed Monday, by Mr. Adams's permission, for their marriage, Mr. Joseph returned, according to his promise, to breakfast at

the Lady Booby's, with whose behaviour since the

evening we shall now acquaint the reader.

an

he

S:

he

16

aid

en

he

all

hat

ft.

ed

to

g.

da

em

ing

0

ho.

id-

fa-

to

the

not

ith

gn ent

ted

ner

the

M.O

nd

S'S

re-

at he

She was no fooner retired to her chamber, than he asked slipslop what she thought of this wonderful creature her nephew had married? " Ma-"dam," faid Slipflop, not yet fufficiently underfunding what answer she was to make. " I ask you." intwered the lady, " what do you think of the dowdy, my niece I think I am to call her?" Slipflop wanting no further hint, began to pull her to pieces, and fo miserably defaced her, that it would have been impossible for any one to have known the person. The lady gave her all the affistance she could, and ended with faying. -- "I think, Slip-"flop, you have done her justice: but yet, bad as " the is, the is an angel compared to this Fanny," Slipflop then fell on Fanny, whom she hacked and hewed in the like barbarous manner, concluding with an observation, that there was always something in those low-life creatures which must distinguish them from their betters. eternally "Really," faid the fady, " I think there is one " exception to your rule; I am certain you may " guess who I mean."-" Not I, upon my word, "Madam," faid Slipflop.—" I mean a young " fellow; fure you are the dullest wretch," faid the lady.-" O ta. I am indeed-Yes truly, Ma-"dam, he is an accession," answered Slipslop.—
"Ay, is he not, Slipslop?" returned the lady-" Is he not so genteel, that a prince might without "a blush acknowledge him for his fon. His be-" haviour is fuch that would not shame the best " education. He borrows from his station a condescension in every thing to his superiors, yet. " unattended by that mean fervility which is cal-" led good behaviour in fuch perfons. Every thing "he doth, hath no mark of the base motive of " fear, but visibly shews some respect and gratitude, and carries with it the pertuation of love.— Ee 3 " And

" of

" W

" W

" for

" if

" WE

" of

" is

" dr

" co

" pa

" er

" wl

" of

" fo

" WC

" fw

" tio

"

" if

lady.

" th

Slipfl

" wa " in

" A

" me

" pa

This

mind

her, ter fo

plexi

" plo " of frigh

at

of of

" And then for his virtue; fuch piety to his parents " fuch tender affection to his fifter, fuch integrity in " his friendship, such bravery, such goodness, that " if he had been born a gentleman, his wife would " have poffeffed the most invaluable bleffing."\_\_\_ " To be fure, Ma'am," faid Slipflop .- " But as " he is," answered the lady, " if he had a thou-" fand more good qualities, it must render a wo-" man of fashion contemptible even to be suspect. " ed of thinking of him : yes, I should despise my " felf for fuch a thought." To be fure Ma'am, faid Slipslop. " And why to be fure?" replied the lady; " thou art always one's echo. Is he not " more worthy of affection than a dirty country " clown, though born of a family as old as the " flood, or an idle worthless rake, or little puisne " beau of quality? And yet thefe we must con-" demn ourfelves to, in order to avoid the cenfure " of the world; to shun the contempt of others, " we must ally ourselves to those we despise: " we must prefer birth, title and fortune, to real " merit. It is a tyranny of custom, a tyranny we " must comply with: for we people of fashion are " the flaves of custom."-" Marry come up!" faid Slipflop, who now well knew which party to take, " If I was a woman of your lady ship's for-" tune and quality; I would be a flave to no bo-" dy!"-" Me," faid the lady. " I am speaking " if a young woman of fashion, who had feen no-" thing of the world, should happen to like such a " fellow.—Me, indeed! I hope thou dost not imagine"- "No, Ma'am, to be fure," cries Slipsop. "No! what no?" cried the lady. Slipstop. No! what ho.

"Thou art always ready to answer before thou spoke
hast heard one So far I must allow he is a "yo

"No. Slipstop. "ple " hast heard one So far I muit and simple of charming fellow. Me, indeed! No, Slipslop, charming fellow. The over with me. — I have "lost a husband, who -but if I should reslect, I fhould run mad. — My future ease must depend " upon forgetfulness. Slipslop, let me hear some

u

04 1

y ,

ed

ot

ry h

ne

n-

ire rs,

le!

eal

we are

1 11

to

or

boing

noh a

not

ries

dy. nou

end ome of

" of thy nonfenfe, to turn my thoughts another " way. What dost thou think of Mr. Andrews?" "Why, I think," fays Slipflop, " he is the hand-" fomest, and most properest man I ever faw; and " if I was a lady of the greatest degree, it would be " well for fome folks. Your Ladyship may talk " of custom if you please; but I am confidous there " is no more comparison between young Mr. An-"drews, and most of the young gentlemen who "come to your Ladyship's house in London; a " parcel of whipper-fnapper sparks: I would soon-"er marry our old Parson Adams: never tell me "what people fay, whilft I am happy in the arms " of him I love. Some folks rail against other " folks, because other folks have what some folks " would have been glad of." -- " And fo." an-" fwered the lady, " if you was a woman of condi-"tion, you would really marry Mr. Andrews?" "-Yes, I affure your Ladyship," replied Slipslop, " if he would have me."-" Fool, idiot," cries the lady " if he would have a woman of fashion! is "that a question? 'No truly, Madam,' faid Slipslop, " I believe it would be none, if Fanny " was out of the way : and I am conficious, if I was " in your Ladyship's place, and liked Mr. Joseph " Andrews she should not stay in the parish a mo-" ment, I am fure Lawyer Scout would fend her " packing, if your ladyship would but say the word." This last speech of Slipslop raised a tempest in the mind of her mistress. She feared Scout had betrayed her, or rather that she had betrayed herself. After fome filence, and a double change of her complexion, first to pale and then to red, she thus spoke: "I am astonished at the liberty you give "your tongue. Would you infinuate, that I em"ployed Scout against this wench, on the account
"of the fellow?" La, Ma'am," said Slipslop, is a op, ave frighted out of her wits, "I affofinate such a a thing!" "I think you dare not," answered t, I

# th

11 01

11 CC

" A

" Th

16 W

" co

" an

" he

" fo

" WC

" (0

" the

" fk

" dr

" ha

" dr

" VY

" wh

" ne

" I fa

" fak

" pre

" ver

" fac

taking

had b

ther

none:

bid he

the lady. " I believe my conduct may defy malice " itself to affert so cursed a flander. If I had ever discovered any wantonness, any lightness in " my behaviour; if I had followed the example of " fome whom thou hast I believe, seen, in allowing myfelf indecent liberties, even with a hufband: but the dear man who is gone, (here " fhe began to fob); was he alive again, (then " fhe produced tears), could not upbraid me with " any one act of tenderness or passion. No, Slip-" flop, all the time I cohabited with him, he never obtained even a kifs from me, without my ex-" prefling reluctance in the granting it. I am fure " he himself never suspected how much I loved " him -- Since his death, thou knowest, though " it is almost fix weeks (it wants but a day) ago, " I have not admitted one vilitor, till this fool my " nephew arrived. I have confined myfelf quite " to one party of friends. -- And can fuch a con-" duct as this fear to be arraigned? To be accused " not only of a passion which I have always de-" spised, but of fixing it on such an object, a crea-" ture fo much beneath my notice." -- " Upon " my word, Ma'am," fays Slipflop, " I do not " understand your Ladyship, nor know I any thing " of the matter." - " I believe, indeed, thou doft " not understand me.—Those are delicacies which " exist only in fuperior minds; thy coarse ideas " cannot comprehend them. Thou art a low " creature, of the Andrews breed, a reptile of a " lower order, a weed that grows in the common " garden of the creation." - " I affure your lady-" fhip," fays lipflop, whose passions were almost of as high an order as her lady's, " I have no " more to do with Common Garden than other " folks. Really your Ladyship talks of servants as " if they were not of the Christian specious. Ser-" vants have flesh and blood, as well as quality; " and Mr. Andrews himself is a proof that they ce they

ca

er

n

Bo

V-

re

n

h

p.

er

x-

re

h

0,

y

te

n-

ed e-

a-

n

ot

ng

oft

ch

as

a

on ly-

oft

no

as er-

ey

they have as good, if not better. And for my "own part, I can't perceive my Dears + are " coarfer than other people's: I am fure, if Mr. " Andrews was a dear of mine, I should not be a-" hamed of him in company with gentlemen; for " whoever hath feen him in his new cloaths, must " confess he looks as much like a gentleman as "any body. Coarfe, quotha! I can't bear to "hear the poor young fellow run down neither: " for I will fay this, I never heard him fay an ill "word of any body in his life. I am fure his " coarfeness doth not ly in his heart; for he is " the best natured man in the world; and as for his " skin, it is no coarfer than other people's, I am " fure. His bosom, when a boy, was as white as "driven fnow; and where it is not covered with "hairs, it is fo still | fakins! if I was VIrs An-" drews, with a hundred a year, I thould not en-" vy the best she who wears a head. A woman " who could not be happy with fuch a man, ought " never to be so: for if he can't make a woman "happy, I never yet beheld the man who could. "I say again, I wish I was a great lady for his " fake; I believe when I had made a gentleman of "him, he'd behave fo, that no body should de-" precate what I had done; and I fancy few would " venture to tell him he was no gentleman to his " face, nor to mine neither." At which words, taking up the candles, she asked her mistress, who had been some time in her bed, if she had any farther commands; who mildly answered she had none; and telling her she was a comical creature, bid her good night.

† Meaning perhaps ideas.

### CHAP. VII.

fions

incula

fuch :

monf

from

houn

refolv

ver h

fond

of the

exam

they

pals'c

dom,

and f

appre

and v

omet

monf

age),

as the

wifer

mean

the m

fo an

natio

ceed

foon

abate

him:

what

ness,

ful ar

lit be

one e

fudde

ove

Philosophical reflections, the like not to be found in any light French commune. Mr Booby's grave advice to Joseph, and Fanny's encounter with a beau.

HABIT, my good reader, hath fo vast a preva lence over the human mind, that there i fearce any thing too strange or too strong to be all ferted of it. The ftory of the mifer, who, from long accustoming to cheat others, came at last to cheat himself, and with great delight and triumph picked his own pocket of a guinea to convey it to his hoard, is not impossible or improbable. In like manner it fares with the practifers of deceit, who from having long deceived their acquaintance, gain at last a power of deceiving themselves, and acquire that very opinion (however false) of their own abi lities, excellencies and virtues, into which they have for years, perhaps, endeavoured to betray their neighbours. Now, reader, to apply this observa tion to my present purpose, thou must know, that as the passion, generally called love, exercises most of the talents of the female or fair world; fo in this they now and then discover a small inclination to deceit: for which thou will not be angry with the beautiful creatures, when thou hast considered, that at the age of seven, or something earlier, Miss i instructed by her mother, that master is a ver monstruous kind of animal, who will if she suffer him to come too near her, infallibly eat he up, and grind her to pieces: that fo far from kil fing or toying with him, of her own accord, the must not admit him to kiss or toy with her; and laftly, that she must never have any affection to wards him; for if the should, all her friends in petticoats would esteem her a traitress, point at her and hunt her out of their fociety. These impres fion

af

om

ph his ik

ho

air

ir

abi

av

nei

va

ha

nof

thi

tha

Si

ver

ffer

he

kif

fh

and

to

s in

her

pref

fion

fons being first received, are farther and deeper inculcated by their school-mistresses and companions; fo that by the age of ten they have contracted fuch a dread and abhorrence of the above-named nonster, that, whenever they see him, they fly from him as the innocent hare doth from the greybound. Hence, to the age of fourteen or fifteen, hey entertain a mighty antipathy to mafter; they resolve, and frequently profess, that they will neter have any commerce with him, and entertain fond hopes of passing their lives out of his reach, of the possibility of which they have so visible an example in their good maiden aunt they arrive at this period, and have now pals'd their fecond climacteric, when their wifdom, grown riper, begins to fee a little farther, and from almost daily falling in master's way, to apprehend the great difficulty of keeping out of it; and when they observe him look often at them, and ometimes very eagerly and earnestly too, (for the monster feldom takes any notice of them till at this age), they then begin to think of their danger: and s they perceive they cannot eafily avoid him, the wifer part bethink themselves of providing by other means for their fecurity. They endeavour, by all the methods they can invent, to render themselves coamiable in his eyes, that he may have no inclination to hurt them; in which they generally fucteed fo well, that his eyes by frequent languishing, oon lessen their idea of his fierceness, and so far bate their fears, that they venture to parley with him: and when they perceive him so different from that he hath been described, all gentleness, softness, kindness, tenderness, fondness, their dreadapprehensions vanish in a moment; and now, it being usual with the human mind to skip from ne extreme to its opposite, as easily, and almost as uddenly, as a bird from one bough to another), ove instantly succeeds to fear. But as it happens

fion

mer

the

don

him

cred

findi

chan

" m

" la

6. I

" ha

" 21

" W

" fo

" be

" for

cli

gir

fir

wil

cer

the

ma

vou

kno

pof

the

find

birt

ftee

take

veni

mat

VOL

Mr. B

H

to persons who have in their infancy been the roughly frightened with certain no-persons called ghosts, that they retain their dread of those being after they are convinced that there are no fuc things: fo these young ladies, tho' they no longe apprehend devouring, cannot fo entirely shake or all that hath been instilled into them; they still en tertain the idea of that cenfure which was f strongly imprinted on their tender minds, to which the declarations of abhorrence they every day hea from their companions greatly contribute. void this cenfure, therefore, is now their only care for which purpose they still pretend the same aven fion to the monfter; and the more they love him the more ardently they counterfeit the antipathy. B the continual and constant practice of which dece on others, they at length impose on themselves and really believe they hate what they love Thu indeed it happened to Lady Booby, who loved lo feph long before the knew it; and now loved him much more than she suspected. She had indeed from the time of his fifter's arrival in the quality of her niece, and from the instant she viewed him the drefs and character of a gentleman, began to conceive fecretly a defign which love had con cealed from herfelf, till a dream betrayed it t her.

She had no fooner rifen than she sent for her no phew; when he came to her, after many complements on his choice, she told him, He might perceive, in her condecension to admit her own for vant to her table, that she looked on the family of Andrews as his relations, and indeed hers; that a he had married into such a family, it became him to endeavour by all methods to raise it as much a possible. At length she advised him to use all his art to distuade Joseph from his intended match which would still enlarge their relation to mean ness and poverty; concluding, that by a commit

ic

ea

a

re

ier im

B

cei

ves

hu

Jo hin

red

y o

n i

n t

con

I I

ne

npli

per

fer

ly o

at a

hin

ch a

ll hi

atch

nean

nmi

fio

fion in the army, or fome other genteel employment, he might foon put young Mr. Andrews on the foot of a gentleman; and that being once done, his accomplishments might quickly gain him an alliance which would not be to their difcredit.

Her nephew heartily embraced this proposal; and finding Mr Joseph with his wife, at his return to her chamber, he immediately began thus: " My love to " my dear Pamela, brother will extend to all her re-" lations, nor thall I shew them less respect than if "I had married into the family of a duke. I hope I " have given you some early testimonies of this, " and shall continue to give you daily more. You " will excuse me therefore, brother, if my concern " for your interest makes me mention what may " be, perhaps, disagreeable to you to hear: but I " must insist upon it, that if you have any value " for my alliance or my friendthip, you will de-"cline any thoughts of engaging farther with a girl, who is, as you are a relation of mine, fo much beneath you. I know there may be at " first some difficulty in your compliance, but that will daily diminish; and you will in the end fincerely thank me for my advice. I own indeed the girl is handsome; but beauty alone is a poor ingredient, and will make but an uncomfortable 'marriage." "Sir, faid Joseph, " I affure you her beauty is her least perfection; nor do I know a virtue which that young creature is not poffeffed of." " As to her virtues," answered Ir. Booby, " you can be yet but a fleader judge of them: but if she had never so many, you will find her equal in these among her superiors in birth and fortune, which now you are to esteem on a footing with yourself; at least I will take care they shall shortly be so unless you prevent me by degrading yourfelf with fuch a match a match I have hardly patience to think VOL. II. Ff

of, and which would break the hearts of your of parents, who now rejoice in the expectation of " feeing you make a figure in the world." " I "know not," " replied Joseph, "that my parents have any power over my inclinations, nor am I " obliged to facrifice my happiness to their whim " or ambition : befides, I shall be very forry to fee " that the unexpected advancement of my fifter 46 should so suddenly inspire them with this wicked " pride, and make them despite their equals. I " am refolved on no account to quit my dear " Fanny, no, though I could raise her as high a-" bove her prefent station as you have raised my " fifter." " Your fifter, as well as myfelf." faid Booby ' are greatly obliged to you for the comparison: but, Sir, she is not worthy to be com-" pared in beauty to my Pamela, nor hath she half " her merit. And besides, Sir, as you civilly " throw my marriage with your fifter in my teeth, " I must teach you the wide difference between us: " my fortune enabled me to please myself, and it " would have been as overgrown a folly in me to " have omitted it, as in you to do it." " My for-" tune enables me to please myself likewise," said Joseph; " for all my pleasure is centred in Fanny; " and whilft I have health, I shall be able to supor port her with my labour in that station to which " the was born, and with which the is content." Brother," faid Pamela, Mr. Booby advises you " as a friend; and, no doubt, my papa and mam-" ma will be of his opinion, and will have great " reason to be angry with you for destroying wha " his goodness hath done, and throwing down ou " family again, after he hath raifed it. It would " become you beter, brother, to pray for the al-" affiftance of grace against such a passion, than to " indulge it." --- " Sure, fifter, you are not it earnest; I am fure she is your equal at least. " -She was my equal," answered Pamela; "bu

" g" h

a I

mor for of t

F

difta

mise her, subst rity tend aske befo

face He ama fhe The his

begg tisficate the caugher ed;

geniquit of h

behi to p

evening.

" I am no longer Pamela Andrews. I am now this " gentleman's lady, and as fuch am above her. -I " hope I shall never behave with an unbecoming " pride; but at the fame time I shall always endeavour " to know myfelf, and question not the assistance of " grace to that purpose." They were now summoned to breakfast, and thus ended their discourse for the prefent, very little to the fatisfaction of any

of the parties.

FEI

SI

n

e

r d

I

ir a-

ny id

n-

n

alf lly

h,

S: li

to

or aid

y :

up

ich it.

OU

m real

ha

out

uld

al

1 10 in

ft. bu

44

Fanny was now walking in an avenue at fome distance from the house, where Joseph had promiled to take the first opportunity of coming to her. She had not a shilling in the world, and had subsisted ever since her return entirely on the charity of Parson Adams. A young gentleman, attended by many fervants, came up to her, and asked her if that was not the Lady Booby's house before him? This, indeed he well knew, but had framed the question for no other reason than to make her look up, and discover if her face was equal to the delicacy of her shape. He no fooner faw it than he was struck with amazement. He stop'd his horse, and swore the was the most beautiful creature he ever beheld. Then inftantly alighting, and delivering his horse to his servant, he rapt out half a dozen oaths that he would kifs her; to which she at first submitted, begging he would not be rude: but he was not fatisfied with the civility of a falute, nor even with the rudest attack he could make on her lips, but caught her in his arms, and endeavoured to kifs her breafts, which, with all her strength she resisted; and, as our spark was not of the Herculean race, with fome difficulty prevented. The young gentleman being foon out of breath in the ftruggle, quitted her; and, remounting his horse, called one of his fervants to him, whom he ordered to fray behind with her, and make her any offers whatever, to prevail on her to return home with him in the F 6 2

evening, and to affure her he would take her into keeping. He then rode on with his other fervants, and arrived at the Lady's house, to whom he was a distant relation, and was come to pay a visit.

The trufty fellow, who was employed in an of. fice he had been long accustomed to, discharged his part with all the fidelity and dexterity imaginable. but to no purpose. She was entirely deaf to his offers, and rejected them with the utmost difdain. At last the pimp, who had perhaps more warm blood about him than his mafter, began to folicit for himself; he told her, though he was a servant, he was a man of fome fortune, which he would make her miftrefs of-and this without any infult to her virtue, for that he would marry her. She answered, if his master himself, or the greatest lord in the land, would marry her, she would refuse him. At last, being weary with persuasions, and on fire with her charms, which would have almost kindled a flame in the bosom of an antient philosopher, or modern divine, he fastened his horse to the ground, and attacked her with much more force than the gentleman had exerted. Poor Fanny would not have been able to refift his rudeness a long time; but the deity, who prefides over chaste love, sent her Joseph to her assistance. He no fooner came within fight, and perceived her struggling with a man, than like a canon-ball, or like lightning, or any thing that is swifter, if any thing be, he ran towards her, and coming up just as the ravisher had torn her handkerchief from her breast, before his lips had touched that feat of innocence and blifs, he dealt him fo lufty a blow in that part of his neck which a rope would have become with the utmost propriety, that the fellow fraggered backwards; and perceiving he had to do with fomething rougher than the little, tender, trembling hand of Fanny, he quitted her, and, turning about, faw his rival, with fire flashing from his

his befo

first

011

ed,

hav

ing

his

and

tion

extr

he

feph

fiit,

ftep

fierd

his

now

aime

lodg

prev

but

fift a

head

er,

he I

his f

the 1

and

how

havi

her

knee

the

ferve

She

bloo

0

S

S

,

S

1.

n

1

t,

d

lt

e

ft

6.

S,

ve

nt

fe

e.

n-

:Ís

er

le

er

or

V

ift

cr

n-

in

e.

W(

do

r,

d,

m

is

his eyes, again ready to affail him; and indeed, before he could well defend himfelf, or return the first blow, received a second, which, had it fallen on that part of the stomach to which it was directed, would have been probably the last he would have had any occasion for; but the ravisher lifting up his hand, drove the blow upwards to his mouth, whence it dislodged three of his teeth; and now not conceiving any extraordinary affection for the beauty of Joseph's person, nor being extremely pleased with this method of falutation, he collected all his force, and aimed a blow at Jofeph's breast, which he artfully parried with one fit, so that it lost its force entirely in the air, and flepping one foot backward he darted his fift fo fiercely at his enemy, that had he not caught it in his hand, (for he was a boxer of no inferior fame) it must have tumbled him on the ground. now the ravisher meditated another blow, which he aimed at that part of the breast where the heart is lodged; Joseph did not catch it as before, yet fo prevented its aim, that it fell directly on his nose, but with abated force. Joseph then moving both fift and foot forwards at the same time, threw his head fo dextroufly into the stomach of the ravisher, that he fell a lifeless lump on the field, where he lay many minutes breathless and motionless.

When Fanny faw her Joseph receive a blow in his face, and blood running in a stream from him, she began to tear her hair, and invoke all human and divine power to his affistance. She was nor, however, long under this affisction, before Joseph having conquered his enemy, ran to her, and affured her he was not hurt; she then instantly fell on her knees, and thanked God that he had made Joseph the means of her rescue, and at the same time preserved him from being injured in attempting it. She offered with her handkerchief to wipe his blood from his face; but he seeing his rival at-

Ff3

tempting

tempting to recover his legs, turned to him, and asked him if had enough; to which the other anfwered he had; for he believed he had fought with the devil instead of a man; and loosening his horse, he said, he should not have attempted the wench, if he had known the had been fo well provided for.

Fanny now begged Joseph to return with her to Parson Adams, and to promise that he would leave her no more. These were propositions so agreeable to Joseph, that, had he heard them, he would have given an immediate affent: but indeed his eyes were now his only fense; for you may remember. reader, that the ravisher had tore her handkerchief from Fanny's neck, by which he had discovered fuch a fight, that Joseph hath declared all the statues he ever beheld were fo much inferior to it in beauty, that it was more capable of converting a man into a statue, than of being imitated by the greatest master of that art. This modest creature, whom no warmth in fummer could ever induce to expose her charms to the wanton fun, a modesty to which, perhaps, they owed their inconceivable whiteness, had stood many minutes bare-necked in the prefence of Joseph, before her apprehension of his danger, and the horror of feeing his blood, would fuffer her once to reflect on what concerned herfelf; till at last, when the cause of her concern had vanished, an admiration at his filence, together with observing the fixed position of his eyes, produced an idea in the lovely maid, which brought more blood into her face than had flowed from Jofeph's nostrils. The snowy hue of her bosom was likewise exchanged to vermilion, at the instant when the clapped her handkerchief round her neck. Joseph saw the uneasiness that she suffered, and immediately removed his eyes from an object, in furveying which he had felt the greatest delight which the organs of fight were capable of convey-

mg

her

nob

whi

froi

this

toge

bro

F

Ad de

Inde

the

dent fam who thei f.eir and Lad the i was folu fair. the ! fix (

who

inter alwa

wou

beha

ing

d

.

it

3

e

>-1

0

le le

cs T,

ef

ed

2-

in

a

ne

re,

03

to

ole in

of od,

ed

rn

ner

ht

0-

vas

ant

ed,

ct,

ht

cy.

ng

ing to his foul. So great was his fear of offending her, and fo truly did his passion for her deserve the noble name of love.

Fanny, being recovered from her confusion, which was almost equalled by what Joseph had felt from observing it, again mentioned her request; this was instantly and gladly complied with, and together they crossed two or three fields, which brought them to the habitation of Mr. Adams.

### CHAP. VIII.

Ad scourse which happened between Mr. Adams, Mrs. Adams, Joseph and Fanny; with some behaviour of Mr. Adams, which would be called by some few readers very low, absurd, and unnatural.

THE parson and his wife had just ended a long dispute, when the lovers came to the door. Indeed this young couple had been the fubject of the dispute; for Mrs Adams was one of those prudent people who never do any thing to injure their families, or, perhaps, one of those good mothers who would even stretch their conscience to serve their children. She had long entertained hopes of fleing her eldest daughter succeed Mrs. Slipslop, and of making her second son an exciseman by Lady Booby's interest. These were expectations the could not endure the thoughts of quitting, and was therefore very uneafy to fee her husband fo refolute to oppose the lady's intention in Fanny's affair. She told him, It behoved every man to take the first care of his family; that he had a wife and fix children, the maintaining and providing for whom would be business enough for him, without intermeddling in other folks' affairs; that he had always preached up submission to superiors, and would do ill to give an example of the contrary behaviour in his own conduct; that if Lady Booby did

did wrong, the must answer for it herself, and the fin would not ly at their door; that Fanny had been a fervant, and bred up in the lady's own family, and confequently she must have known more of her than they did; and it was very improbable, is the had behaved herfelf well, that the lady would have been fo bitterly her enemy; that perhaps he was too much inclined to think well of her, because the was handsome, but handsome women were of. ten no better than they should be; that God made ugly women as well as handsome ones; and that if a woman had virtue, it fignified nothing whether the had beauty or no For all which reafons the concluded he should oblige the lady, and stop the future publication of the banns. But all thefe excellent arguments had no effect on the parfon, who perfifted in doing his duty, without regarding the consequence it might have on his worldly interest: he endeavoured to answer her as well as he could, to which she had just finished her reply, (for the had always the last word every where but at church), when Joseph and Fanny entered their kitchen, where the parson and his wife then fat at breakfast, over some bacon and cabbage. There was a coldness in the civility of Mrs. Adams, which persons of accurate speculation might have obferved, but escaped her present guests; indeed it was a good deal covered by the heartiness of Adams, who no fooner heard that Fanny had neither eat nor drank that morning, than he prefented her a bone of bacon he had just been gnawing, being the only remains of his provision, and then ran nimbly to the tap, and produced a mug of fmall beer, which he called ale; however, it was the best in his house. Joseph, addressing himself to the parson, told him the discourse which had passed between Squire Booby, his fister, and himfelf, concerning Fanns: he then acquainted him with the dangers whence he had refcued her, and communicated.

He comon that he w

com

make ha

" OI

" fo " l :

" in " you wa " lea" th

" ar " wl " ou " T]

" pa " wo " on " br

" du
" ve:
" To

" an " de " im

" to " po " dif

w wh

e

1

2

f

r

e

e

e.

,

t

r

t

e

1

.

t

.

.

n

S

f

d

.

n d

d.

communicated fome apprehensions on her account. He concluded, that he should never have an east moment till Fanny was absolutely his, and begged that he might be fuffered to fetch a licence, faying he would eafily borrow the money. The parfon anfwered. That he had already given his fentiments concerning a licence and that a very few days would make it unnecessary. " Joseph' fayshe, "I wish this " hafte doth not arife rather from your impatience " than your fear, but as it certainly fprings from " one of these causes, I will examine both. Of " each of these, therefore, in their turn : and first, " for the first of these, namely, impatience. Now, "I must inform you, that, if in your purposed " marriage with this young woman, you have no " intention but the indulgence of carnal appetites, " you are guilty of a very heinous fin. Marriage " was ordained for nobler purpotes, as you will " learn when you hear the fervice, provided on " that occasion, read to you. Nay, perhaps, if you " are a good lad, I shall give a fermon gratis, "wherein I shall demonstrate how little regard " ought to be had to the flesh on such occasions. "The text will be, child, Matthew the vth, and " part of the 28th verse. Whosoever looketh on a " woman, fo as to luft after her. The latter part I shall " omit, as foreign to my purpofe. Indeeed all fuch " brutal lufts and affections are to be greatly fub-"dued, if not totally eradicated, before the " veffel can be faid to be confecrated to honour. "To marry with a view of gratifying those incli-" nations, is a proftitution of that holy ceremony, " and must entail a curse on all who so lightly un-" dertake it. If, therefore, this hafte arises from " impatience, you are to correct, and not give way " to it. Now, as to the second head which I proposed to speak to, namely, Fear: it argues a "diffidence highly criminal of that power in " which alone we should put our trust, seeing we

" may be well affured that he is able not only to " defeat the designs of our enemies, but even to " turn their hearts. Instead of taking. therefore, " any unjustifiable or desperate means to rid our " felves of fear, we should refort to prayer only on " these occasions; and we may be then certain of " obtaining what is best for us When any accident dent threatens us, we are not to despair, nor, when it overtakes us, to grieve; we must submit in all things to the will of Providence, and " fet our affections so much on nothing here, that " we cannot quit it without reluctance. You are " a young man, and can know but little of this "world; I am older, and have feen a great deal, "eft
"All passions are criminal in their excess: and "to
"even love itself, if it is not subservient to out "his
"duty, may render us blind to it. Had Abraham "ver
"fo loved his son Isaac as to refuse the facrisher "fur "fo loved his fon Isaac as to refuse the facrific fur required, is there any of us who would not con the demn him? Joseph, I know your many good the qualities, and value you for them: but as lan to render an account of your soul, which is com for mitted to my cure, I cannot see any fault with from out reminding you of it. You are too much from the inclined to passion, child, and have set your as fections so absolutely on this young woman, tha fis if God required her at your hands, I fear you would reluctantly part with her. Now, believ for he me, no Christian ought so to set his heart or any person or thing in this world, but tha whenever it shall be required or taken from him any manner by Divine Providence, he may will so he able, peaceably, quietly, and contentedly to have and acquainted Mr. Adams that his youngest so was drowned. He stood silent a moment, and so had he began to stamp about the room, and deplore his lower whelmed with concern likewise, recovered him the server helmed with concern likewise, recovered him the server helmed with concern likewise, recovered him server helmed with concern likewise, recovered him the server helmed with concern likewise, recovered him verwhelmed with concern likewife, recovered him

that I own ( was : nothi and g

felf f

fon ;

to his " abo " my " bu

" of " ou

nftea

1 

r, b

ia

II.

hi

al

nd Dui

am

fice

on

000 an

om

(e

felf sufficiently to endeavour to comfort the parion; in which attempt he used many arguments, that he had at feveral times remembered out of his own discourses, both in private and public, (for he was a great enemy to the passions, and preached nothing more than the conquest of them by reason and grace) but he was not at leifure now to hearken to his advice. " Child, child," faid he, " do not go " about impossibilities. Had it been any other of " my children, I could have borne it with patience; " but my little prattler, the darling and comfort " of my old age,—the little wretch to be fnatched " out of life just at its entrance into it; the sweet-"eft, best-tempered boy, who never did a thing " to offend me. It was but this morning I gave " him his first lesson in Qua Genus. This was the "very book he learnt! poor child! it is of no " further use to thee now. He would have made " the best scholar, and have been an ornament to "the church;—fuch parts, and fuch goodness, "never met in one so young." "And the hand-" fomest lad too," says Mrs. Adams, recovering from a swoon in Fanny's arms,—My poor Jacky, and "shall I never see thee more?" cries the parson. "Yes, furely," fays Joseph, "and in a better that "place; you will meet again never to part more."

you — I believe the parson did not hear these words, liev for he paid little regard to them, but went on later the mention with the second s menting whilst the tears trickled down into his both a lom. At last he cried out, "Where is my little darling?" and was fallying out, when, to his may great surprise and joy, in which I hope the reader ly will sympathize, he met his son in a wet condition indeed, but alive, and running towards him. The state berson who brought the news of his missfortune had been a little too eager, as people sometimes is lower, from, I believe, no very good principle, to estate ill news; and seeing him fall into the river, him aftead of running to his assistance, directly ran to select the second selection of the second selection in the second second selection of the second selection in the second selection of the second selection of the second selection of the second second selection of the second sele

" gi

" V

" m

" lo

" lo

" OL

" fa

fays .

" no

" de

" ou

" co

" wi

" ban " you

" wou " been

as !

" fhor " com righ 'muc

who

her,

and

well

and

you

have

me,

ende

VOL.

acquaint his father of a fate which he had concluded to be inevitable, but whence the child was relieved by the same poor pedlar who had relieved his father before from a less distress. The parion's jor was now as extravagant as his grief had been be fore; he kiffed and embraced his fon a thousand times, and danced about the room like one frantic; but as foon as he discovered the face of his old friend the pedlar, and heard the fresh obligation he had to him, what were his fenfations? not those which two courtiers feel in one another's embraces: not those with which a great man receives the vile, treacherous engines of his wicked purposes; not those with which a worthless younger "fra brother wishes his elder joy of a son or a man "my congratulates his rival on his obtaining a mi- " wit ftress, a place, or an honour.—No, reader, he food felt the ebulition, the overflowings of a full homest, open heart towards the person who had conferred a real obligation, and of which if thou food canst not conceive an idea within, I will not vainly " nev endeavour to affift thee.

When these tumults were over, the parson, taking Joseph aside, proceeded thus :- " No, Joseph " do not give too much way to thy passions, it " thou dost expect happiness." The patience of he interrupted the parson, saying, it was easier to give advice than take it; nor did he perceive he could so entirely conquer himself. hended he had loft his fon, or when he found him recovered. -- "Boy," replied Adams, raising his voice; "it doth not become green heads to ad-" vise grey hairs. — Thou art ignorant of the " tenderness of fatherly affection; when thou " art a father, thou wilt be capable then on " ly of knowing what a father can feel. No man " is obliged to impossibilities; and the loss of a " child is one of those great trials, where our " grief

" grief may be allowed to become immoderate." "Well, Sir," cries Joseph, " and if I love a " mistress as well as you your child, furely her " loss would grieve me equally." "Yes, but such "love is foolishness, and wrong in itself, and " ought to be conquered," answered Adams; it " favours too much of the flesh." " Sure, Sir," fays Joseph, " it is not finful to love my wife, no, " not even to doat on her to distraction!" In-" deed but it is," faid Adams. " Every man " ought to love his his wife, no doubt; we are " commanded fo to do; but we ought to love her " with moderation and difcretion."-" I am a-" fraid I shall be guilty of some sin, in spite of all "my endeavours," fays Joseph; "for I shall love " without any moderation, I am fure."-You talk " foolishly and childishly," cries Adams. " In-" deed," fays Mrs. Adams, who had liftened to n-ou the latter part of the conversation " you talk more " foolishly yourself, I hope, my dear, you will "bands can love their wives too well. If I know the bands can love their wives too well. If I know the work is a work of the work of the band in the house, I am fure I had not have the work of the w "been convinced you had loved me as well as you could, I can answer for myfelf, I 'fhould have hated and despised you. Marry 'come up! Fine doctrine indeed! A wife hath a right to insist on her busband's loving her as he much as ever she can; and he is a finful villain who doth not. Doth he not promise to love ling her, and to comfort her, and to cherish her, and all that? I am fure I remember it all, as well as if I had repeated it over but yesterday, hou and shall never forget it. Besides, I am certain you do not preach as you practife: for you man have been a loving and a cherishing husband to me, that's the truth on't; and why you should endeavour to put fuch wicked nonfense in-Gg VOL. II.

in i

he o-

0

er . 10

ad-

the

on-

of a

out

griel

"to this young man's head, I cannot devise." Don't hearken to him, Mr Joseph, be as good a husband as you are able. and love your wife with all your body and soul too." Here a violent rap at the door put an end to their discourse, and produced a scene which the reader will find in the next chapter.

### CHAP. IX.

A visit which the good Lady Booby and her polite friend paid to the parson.

THE Lady Booby had no fooner had an account from the gentleman of his meeting a wonderful beauty near her house, and perceived the raptures with which he spoke of her, than immediately concluding it must be Fanny, she began to meditate a design of bringing them better acquainted: and to entertain hopes that the fine cloaths, prefents, and promifes of this youth, would prevail on her to abandon Joseph; the therefore proposed to her company a walk in the fields before dinner, when she led them towards Mr. Adams's house; and, as she approached it, told them, if they pleased she would divert them with one of the most ridiculous fights they had ever feen, which was an old foolish parson, who, she faid laughing, kept a wife and fix brats on a falary of about twenty pounds a year; adding, that there was not fuch another ragged family in the parish. They all readily agreed to this vifit, and arrived whilft Mrs. Adams was declaiming as in the last chapter. Beau Didapper, which was the name of the young gentleman we have feen riding towards Lady Booby's with his cane mimicked the rap of a London foot man at the door. The people within, namely, A dams, his wife, and three children, Joseph, Fanmy, and the pedlar, were all thrown into confu

tha ha

fio

do

he

pa

wi

lad

his fai

> med He for

ger

He

mi

wig boo nan mo Th to tive cou Ita

he was fea lingled had

to

raé

fion by this knock; but Adams went directly to the door, which being opened, the Lady Booby and her company walked in, and were received by the parson with about two hundred bows, and by his wife with as many curties; the latter telling the lady, She was ashamed to be in such a pickle, and that her house was in such a litter; but that if she had expected such an honour from her ladyship, she would have found her in a better manner. The parson made no apologies, though he was in his half cassock, and a stannel night-cap. He said, they were heartily welcome to his poor cottage, and turning to Mr. Didapper, cried out, Non mea renidet in domo lacunar. The beau answered, He did not understand Welch: at which the par-

fon stared and made no reply.

1

e

ie

n-

ne

e-

to

it-

ıs,

e-

0-

re

s's

if he

ch

g,

aty

ea-

au

en-

y's

A.

an

fu

Mr. Didapper, or Beau Didapper, was a young gentleman of about four foot five inches in height. He wore his own hair, though the fcarcity of it might have given him fufficient excuse for a perriwig. His face was thin and pale: the shape of his body and legs none of the best; for he had very narrow shoulders, and no calf: and his gait might more properly be called hopping than walking. The qualifications of his mind were well adapted to his person. We shall handle them first negatively. He was not entirely ignorant; for he could talk a little French, and fing two or three Italian fongs: he had lived too much in the world to be bashful, and too much at court to be proud: he feemed not much inclined to avarice; for he was profuse in his expences: nor had he all the features of prodigality; for he never gave a shilling; - no hater of women; for he always dangled after them; yet so little subject to lust, that he had, among those who knew him best, the character of great moderation in his pleasures. No drinker of wine; nor so addicted to passion, but Gg 2

that a hot word or two from an adversary made

him immediately cool.

Now, to give him only a dash or two on the affirmative fide: though he was born to an immense fortune, he chose, for the pitiful and dirty conside. ration of a place of little consequence, to depend entirely on the will of a fellow, whom they call a great man; who treated him with the utmost difrespect, and exacted of him a plenary obedience to his commands; which he implicitly fubmitted to, at the expence of his conscience, his honour, and of his country, in which he had himfelf fo very large a share. And to finish his character; as he was entirely well fatisfied with his own person and parts, fo he was very apt to ridicule and laugh at any imperfection in another. Such was the little person, or rather thing, that hopped after Lady Booby into Mr. Adams's kitchen.

The parson and his company retreated from the chimney fide, where they had been feated, to give room to the lady and hers. Inflead of returning any of the curtiles or extraordinary civilities of Mrs. Adams, the lady turning to Mr. Booby, cried out, " Quelle Bête Quel Animal!" And presently after discovering Fanny (for she did not need the the circumstance of her standing by Joseph to affure the identity of her person) she asked the beau, "Whether he did not think her a pretty girl?" -"Begad, Madam," answered he, "'tis the very

" fame I met." " I did not imagine," replied the lady, " you had so good a taste." " Because I " never liked you, I warrant," cries the beau.
"Ridiculous," faid she; " you know you was al-

" ways my aversion." " I would never men-

"tion aversion," answered the beau, "with " that face \*; dear Lady Boody, wash your face

" before

16 b

He t

Fan

pray

last

had

was

ner

mer

pict

him

" a

1: C

16 10

" I

anfi

ther

16 F

" I

" i

"

quo

ii b

46 is

afte

crie

" V

" V

11 1 fom

thr

par

" C " I

" a

" (

N

<sup>\*</sup> Lest this should appear unnatural to some readers, we think proper to acquaint them, that it is taken verbatim from very polite conversation.

"before you mention aversion, I beseech you." He then laughed, and turned about to coquet it with

Fanny.

1

e

ÿ

1

e

Mrs. Adams had been all this time begging and praying the ladies to fit down, a favour which the at last obtained. The little boy to whom the accident had happened, still keeping his place by the fire, was chid by his mother for not being more mannerly; but Lady Booby took his part, and commending his beauty, told the parfon he was his very picture. She then feeing a book in his hand, asked him, "If he could read?" "Yes;" cried Adams, " a little Latin, Madam; he is just got into Que " Genus." " A fig for quere genius," answered the, " let me hear him read a little English." - " Lege, " Dick, lege," faid Adams: but the boy made no answer, till he saw the parson knit his brows; and then cried, " I don't understand you, father." "How, boy!" fays Adams, "What doth lego " make in the Imperative mood? legito, doth "it not?" "Yes," answered Dick, ---" And what besides?" says the father. quoth the fon, after fome hesitation. " A good "boy," fays the father; " and now, child, what " is the English of lego? - To which the boy, after long puzzling, he could not tell. " How," cries Adams in a paffion, --- "What, hath the " water washed away your learning?" " Why, " what is Latin for the English verb read? Con-" fider before you speak." - The child considered fome time, and then the parson cried twice or thrice, L -, le-." Dick answered "Lego,"-Very " well; -and then what is the English," fays the parson, "of the verb lego?" "To read, cried Dick -" Very well," faid the parfon, a good boy, you" " can do well, if you will take pains.- I affure your " Ladyship he is not much above eight years old, " and is out of his Propria qua maribus already .-"Come, Dick, read to her Ladyship;"-which Gg 3

The again defiring, in order give the beau an opportunity with Fanny, Dick began as in the following chapter.

#### CHAP. X.

The history of two friends, which may afford an useful lesson to all these persons who happen to take up their residence in married families.

" I FONARD and Paul were two friends"-" Pronounce it Lennard, child." cried the parfon - " Pray, Mr. Adams," fays Lady Booby, " Let your fon read without interruption." Dick then proceeded. "Lennard and Paul were two " friend, who, having been educated together at " the fame school, commenced a friendship which "they preserved a long time for each other. It " was fo deeply fixed in both their minds, that a " long absence, during which they had maintained " no corresponce, did not eradicate nor lessen it: " but it revived in all its force at their first meeting, " which was not till after fifteen years absence, " most of which time Lennard had spent in the " East-Indi-es." - " Pronounce it short, In-" dies," fays Adams .- " Pray, Sir, be quiet," fays the lady-The boy repeated - " in the East-" Indies, whilft Paul had ferved his king and coun-" try in the army. In which different fervices " they had found fuch different fuccess, that Len-" nard was now married, and retired with a for-" tune of thirty thousand pounds; and Paul was " rived to the degree of a lieutenant of foot, and " was not worth a fingle shilling. " The regiment in which Paul was stationed, " happened to be ordered into quarters within a

" small distance from the estate which Lennard

" had purchased, and where he was settled.

" latter, who was now become a country gentle-

" n

" V

" i

66 a

" I

" ti

" n

" to

" h

" h

cc fi

a f

" fi

" r

" n

" n

" P

" p

" h

" W

" to

" n

" n

" n

" tl

" n

"

" a

64

" man, and a justice of peace, came to attend the " quarter-fessions in the town where his old friend " was quarted. Soon after his arrival, some affair " in which a foldier was concerned, occasioned " Paul to attend the justices. Manhood and time, " and the change of climate, had so much altered " Lennard, that Paul did not immediately recollect " the features of his old acquaintance : but it was " otherwise with Lennard, he knew Paul the mo-" ment he faw him; nor could he contain him-" felf from quitting the bench, and running hastily " to embrace him. Paul flood at first a little fur-" prifed; but had foon fufficient information from " his friend, whom he no fooner remembered than " he returned his embrace with a passion which " made many of the spectators laugh, and gave to " fome few a much higher and more agreeable " fenfation.

"Not to detain the reader with minute circum"flances, Lennard infifted on his friend's return"ing with him to his house that evening; which
"request was complied with, and leave for a
"month's absence for Paul obtained of the com-

" manding officer.

ul

y,

k

O

at

ch It

ed

it:

ıg,

ce,

he n-

t,"

ift-

ın-

ces

en-

or-

was

and

ed,

n a

ard

his

tle-

an,

"If it was possible for any circumstance to give any addition to the happiness which Paul proposed in this visit, he received that additional pleasure, by finding, on his arrival at his friend's house, that his lady was an old acquaintance which he had formerly contracted at his quarters; and who had always appeared to be of a most agreeable temper; a character she had ever maintained among her intimates, being of that number, every individual of which is called quite the best fort of woman in the world.

"But good as this lady was, she was still a wo"man; that is to say, an angel, and not an angel."
"You must mistake, child," cries the parson,
"for you read nonsense." "It is so in the book,"
answered

66 j II. C

" 11

16 W

"P

" it

it ce

ei

01 in

pı

is fu

bo

fai

the

vo

fol

the

afl

COI

im

wh

the

nex

pro

tolo

and

him

heli

par

My

eat

kno

too,

am (

this

answered the fon. Mr. Adams was then filenced by authority, and Dick proceed. - " For tho' her of person was of that kind to which men attribute " the name of angel, yet in her mind she was per-

" feetly woman. Of which a great degree of ob-" ftinacy gave the most remarkable, and perhaps

" most pernicious instance.

" A day or two past after Paul's arrival, before any instances of this appeared; but it was im-" poffible to conceal it long. Both she and her " hufband foon loft all apprehenfion from their " friend's presence, and fell to their disputes " with as much vigour as ever. These were still " purfued with the utmost ardour and eagerness, " however trifling the causes were whence they " first arose. Nay, however incredible it may seem, " the little confequence of the matter in debate " was frequently given as a reason for the fierce-" ness of the contention, as thus: If you loved " me, fure you would never dispute with me fuch " a trifle as this." The answer to which is very ob-" vious; for the argument would hold equally " on both fides, and was constantly retorted with " fome addition, as --- " I am fure I have " much more reason to say so, who am in the " right." During all these disputes, Paul always " kept strict filence, and preserved an even coun-" nance, without shewing the least visible inclina-" to either party. One day, however, when Ma-" dam had left the room in a violent fury, Len-" nard could not refrain from referring his caule to his friend. Was ever any thing fo unrea-" fonable, fays he, as this woman? What shall ! " do with her? I doat on her to distraction: nor " have I any cause to complain of more than this " obstinacy in her temper; whatever she affert " fhe will maintain against all the reason and con-" viction in the world. Pray give me your advice " -First, says Paul, I will give my opinion, which

1

7

te

r-

b-

ps

re

m-

er

eir

tes

till

eis,

ney

m,

ate

ce-

ved

nch

ob.

ally

vith

ave

the

vays

oun-

ina-

Ma-

Len-

aule

rea-

all I

nor

this

Heru

con

vice

hich

66 j

" is flatly, that you are in the wrong; for suppos-" ing the is in the wrong, was the fubject of your " contention any ways material? What fignified it " whether you was married in a red or a yellow " waistcoat? for that was your dispute. Now suppose she was mistaken, as you love her you say tenderly, and I believe the deferves it, would " it not have been wifer to have yielded, tho' you certainly knew yourfelf in the right, than to give " either her or yourself any uneasiness? For my own part, if ever I marry, I am refolved to enter i into an agreement with my wife, that in all difputes, (especially about trifles), that party who is most convinced they are right, shall always furrender the victory; by which means we shall both be forward to give up the cause. I own, faid Lennard, my dear friend, shaking him by the hand, there is great truth and reason in what you fay; and I will for the future endeavour to follow your advice. They foon after broke up the conversation, and Lennard going to his wife aiked her pardon, and told her his friend had convinced him he had been in the wrong. She immediately began a vast encomium on Paul, in which he feconded her, and both agreed he was the worthiest and wifest man upon earth. When next they met, which was at supper, tho' she had promifed not to mention what her husband had told her, she could not forbear casting the kindest and most affectionate looks on Paul, and asked him, with the sweetest voice, whether she should help him to some potted woodcock? - Potted partridge, my dear, you mean, fays the husband. My dear, fays fhe, I ask your friend if he will eat any potted woodcock; and I am fure I must know who potted it. I think I should know too, who shot them, replied the husband, and I am convinced that I have not feen a woodcock this year; however, though I know I am in the " right

" right I fubmit, and the potted partridge is potted " woodcock, if you defire to have it fo It is equal " to me, fays she, whether it is one or the other " but you would perfuade one out of one's fenfes " to be fure you are always in the right in your " own opinion; but your friend, I believe, know " which he is eating. Paul answered nothing, and " the dispute continued, as usual, the greatest par " of the evening. The next morning the lady ac cidentally meeting Paul, and being convinced " he was her friend, and of her fide, accosted him " thus: --- I am certain, Sir you have long find " wondered at the unreasonableness of my hus " band. He is indeed, in other respects, a good " fort of man; but so positive, that no woman " but one of my complying temper could possible " live with him. Why, last night, now, was eve " any creature fo unreasonable ?- I am certain you " must condemn him -Pray, answer me, was h " not in the wrong?" Paul, after a short silence " fpoke as follows: "I am forry, Madam that a " good manners obliges me to answer against m " will, fo an adherence to truth forces me to de " clare myself, of a different opinion. To be plai " and honest, you was entirely in the wrong; th " cause I own not worth disputing, but the bird " was undoubtedly a partridge." O Sir," replied the lady, " I cannot possibly help your taste."-" Madam," retured Paul, that is very little ma " terial; for had it been otherwise, a husban " might have expected fubmission." - " Indeed "Sir," fays she; "I affure you — "Yes, Ma" dam," cried he, "he might from a person of " your excellent understanding: and, pardon m " for faying fuch a condescension would have " shewn a superiority of sense even to you " husband himself."-" But, dear Sir," said sh "why should I submit when I am in the right! - " For that very reason," answered he; " woul

" gin"
" out
" wro

" WOT

" ries " tha " lefs " I h

" the " W " in " tife " pa

" wi " for " bu " fw

" de " fh " an " ha

" ed " an " ha " th

" pr

" fo

" fe

" o

" would be the greatest instance of affection ima-" ginable: for can any thing be a greater object of " our compassion, than a person we love in the " wrong? " " Ay, but I should endeavour," said he, " to fet him right " " Pardon me, Madam," answered Paul, "I will apply to your own expe-" rience, if you ever found your arguments had " that effect. The more our judgement errs, the " lefs we are willing to own it : for my own part, " I have always observed the persons who maintain " the worst side in any contest, are the warmest." "Why," fays the, "I must confess there is truth " in what you fay, and I will endeavour to prac-" tife it." The husband then coming in, Paul de-" parted. And Lennard approaching his wife " with an air of good-humour, told her he was " forry for their foolish dispute the last night: "but he was now convinced of his error. She an-" fwered, fmiling, She believed the owed his con-" descension to his complaifance; that she was a-" shamed to think a word had passed on so filly " an occasion, especially as she was fatisfied she " had been mistaken. A little contention follow-" ed, but with the utmost good will to each other, " and was concluded by her afferting, that Paul " had thoroughly convinced her she had been in " the wrong. Upon which they both united in the " praises of their common friend.

d

00

ol

01

cd

m de

ai

th ire

ie

,\_

na

in

eed

VIa

0 0

m

av

ou

th

t?

ou

"Paul now passed his time with great satisfac"tion; these disputes being much less frequent, as
"well as shorter than usual; but the devil, or
"fome unlucky accident, in which perhaps the
devil had no hand shortly put an end to his happiness. He was now eternally the private referee of every difference; in which, after having
perfectly, as he thought, established the doctrine
of submission, he never scrupled to assure
both privately, that they were in the right in
every argument as before he had followed the

" contrary method. One day a violent litigation " happened in his absence, and both parties " agreed to refer it to his decision. The hus-" band professing himself fure the decision " would be in his favour; the wife answered, He " might be mistaken; for she believed his friend was convinced how feldom she was to blame-" and that if he knew all-The hufband re-" plied,-" My dear, I have no defire of any re-" trofpect; but I believe, if you knew all too, you would not imagine my friend fo entirely on your " fide." " Nay," fays she, fince you provoke me, " I will mention one instance. You may remem-" ber our dispute about fending Jacky to school in " cold weather, which point I gave up to you from " mere compassion, knowing myself to be in the " right; and Paul himfelf told me afterwards, he "thought me fo." "My dear," replied the hufband, " I will not fcruple your veracity; but I " affure you folemnly, on my applying to him, he " gave it absolutely on my fide, and faid he would " have acted in the fame manner." They then " proceeded to produce numberless other in-" stances, in all which Paul had, on vows of secre-" fy, given his opinion on both fides. In the con-" clusion, both believing each other, they fell fe-" verely on the treachery of Paul, and agreed that he had been the occasion of almost every dispute " which had fallen out between them. They then " became extremely loving, and so full of conde-" fcension on both sides, that they vied with each " other in censuring their own conduct, and " jointly vented their indignation on Paul, whom " the wife, fearing a bloody consequence, ear-" nestly entreated her husband to suffer quietly " to depart the next day, which was the time fixed " for his return to quarters, and then drop his " acquaintance.

46

66

66

44

44

"

"

66

46

"

60

"

66

66

46

"

16

16

"

a fi

tre

Fai

and

con

wh

ton

por

the

wh

S

1

C

d

.

u r

.

n

n

e

e .

I

e

d

n

.

1.

e

n e-

h

d

n

.

y

d

is

er

" However ungenerous this behaviour in Len-" nard may be esteemed, his wife obtained a pro-" mife from him (tho' with difficulty) to follow " her advice; but they both expressed such un-" usual coldness that day to Paul, that he, who " was quick of apprehension, taking Lennard " aside, pressed him so home, that he at last dis-" covered the fecret. Paul acknowledged the truth, " but told him the defign with which he had done " it .- To which the other answered, He would " have acted more friendly to have let him into " the whole defign: for that he might have affured " himself of his secrefy. Paul replied, with some " indignation, He had given him a fufficient proof " how capable he was of concealing a fecret from " his wife. Lennard returned with fome warmth, " He had more reason to upbraid him, for that he " had caused most of the quarrels between them, " by his strange conduct, and might (if they had " not discovered the affair to each other) have " been the occasion of their separation. Paul then " faid"-But fomething now happened, which put a stop to Dick's reading, and of which we shall treat in the next chapter.

# CHAP. XI.

In which the history is continued.

JOSEPH Andrews had borne with great uneafines the impertinence of Beau Didapper to Fanny, who had been talking pretty freely to her, and offering her settlements; but the respect to the company had restrained him from intersering, whilst the beau confined himself to the use of his tongue only: but the said beau, watching an opportunity whilst the ladies eyes were disposed another way, offered a rudeness to her with his hands; which Joseph no sooner perceived, than he presented Vol. II. Hh

66

A

64

65

66

16

16

"

66

16

"

68 .

"

fwe

11 11

11

"

" 2

a f

" t

a f

" C

" k

" W

had

" to

" ye

" 0

te vi

" ca

" to

ceed

abou

him with fo found a box on the ear, that it conveved him feveral paces from where he flood. The ladies immediately screamed out rose from their chairs, and the beau, as foon as he recovered him. felf, drew his hanger, which Adams observing, fnatched up the lid of a pot in his left hand, and, covering himfelf with it as with a shield, without any weapon of offence in his other hand, ftept in before Joseph, and exposed himself to the enraged beau, who threatened fuch perdition and destruction, that it frighted the women, who were all got in a huddle together, out of their wits, even to hear his denunciations of vengeance. Joseph was of a different complexion, and begged Adams to let his rival come on, for he had a good cudgel in his hand, and did not fear him. Fanny now fainted into Mrs. Adams's arms, and the whole room was in confusion, when Mr. Booby passing by Adams, who lay fnug under the pot-lid, came up to Didapper, and infifted on his fheathing the hanger, promising he should have fatisfaction; which lofeph declared he would give him, and fight him at any weapon whatever. The beau now sheathed his hanger, and, taking out a pocket-glass, and vowing vengeance all the time, re-adjusted his hair the parson deposited his shield, and Joseph, run ning to Fanny, foon brought her back to life Lady Booby chid Joseph for his infult on Didap per; but he answered, He would have attacked a army in the same cause. "What cause!" said the lady. " Madam," answered Joseph, " he wa rude to that young woman." - "What," fays the lady, " I suppose he would have kissed the wench " and is a gentleman to be struck for such an of " fer? I must tell you, Joseph, these airs of not become you." — " Madam, " said Ma pain, chidi Booby, " I faw the whole affair, and I do no a ma er commend my brother; for I cannot percent only " why he should take upon him to be this girl wet l 66 chan

.

it

n

d

c.

ot

ar

fa

his his

ted

was

ms.

Di

ger,

0-

him

thed

and

hair

run

life

idap

ed at

d the

Wa

ys th

ench

an of

rs d

1 Mr

O no

ercein

s girl

chan

" champion." -- " I can commend him," fays Adams, 'he is a brave lad; and it becomes any " man to be the champion of the innocent; and he " must be the basest coward who would not vindi-" cate a woman, with whom he is on the brink " of marriage."-" Sir," faid Mr. Booby, "My " brother is not a proper match for fuch a young " woman as this." - " No," fays Lady Booby, " nor do you Mr. Adams, act in your proper " character, by encouraging any fuch doings; " and I am very much furprifed you should " concern yourfelf in it. - 1 think your " wife and family your properer care."—"Indeed, "Madam, your Ladship says very true,"—anfwered Mrs. Adams; "he talks a pack of nonfenfe. " that the whole parish are his children. I am " fure I don't understand what he means by it; " it would make some women suspect he had gone " aftray : but I acquit him of that : I can read " scripture as well as he, and I never found that " the parson was obliged to provide for other " folks children; and besides, he is but a poor " curate, and hath little enough, as your Ladyship "knows, for me and mine." - You fay very " well, Mrs. Adams," quoth the Lady Booby, who had not spoke a word to her before, " you feem " to be a very fensible woman; and I assure you, " your husband is acting a very foolish part, and " oppofing his own interest, seeing my nephew is " violently fet against this match: and indeed I " can't blame him; it is by no means one fuitable " to our family." In this manner the lady proceeded with Mrs. Adams, whilst the beau hopped about the room, shaking his head, partly from pain, and partly from anger; and Pamela was chiding Fanny for her affurance, in aiming at fuch a match as her brother. - Poor Fanny answered only with her tears, which had long fince begun to wet her handkerchief, which Joseph perceiving, Hh 2

C

p

it

h

pi

ar

th

ha

di fc

61

tu

pe

fai

to

to

de

G

be

ne

ma

acc

by

no

fhi

to

her by the arm, and wrapping it in his, carried her off, swearing he would own no relation to any one who was an enemy to her he loved more than all the world. He went out with Fanny under his left arm, brandishing a cudgel in his right, and neither Mr. Booby nor the beau thought proper to oppose him. Lady Booby and her company made a very short stay behind him; for the lady's bell now summoned them to dress, for which they had

just time before dinner.

Adams feemed now very much dejected, which his wife perceiving, began to apply some matrimopial balfam. She told him he had reason to be concerned; for that he had probably ruined his family with his tricks almost: but perhaps he was grieved for the loss of his two children, Joseph and Fanny. His eldest daughter went on; -" Indeed, father, it is very hard to bring strangers " here to eat your children's bread out of their " mouths. - You have kept them ever fince they " came home; and, for any thing I fee to the con-" trary, may keep them a month longer. Are " you obliged to give her meat tho'f she was never " fo handsome? But I don't see she is so much " handsomer than other people. If people were to " be kept for their beauty, she would scarce fare " better than her neighbours, I believe.—As for " Mr. Joseph, I have nothing to fay, he is a young " man of honest principles, and will pay some time " or other for what he hath; but for the girl,-" why doth she not return to her place she ran a-" way from? I would not give fuch a vagabond " flut a halfpenny, though I had a million of mo-" ney, no, though she was starving." " Indeed " but I would," cries little Dick; and, father, ra-" ther than poor Fanny shall be starved, I will " give her all this bread and cheefe,"-(offering what he held in his hand). Adams smiled on the boy, and told him, he rejoiced to fee he was a Christian,

1

.

.

S

h

S

1

1-

as

h

0

re

or

ng

ne

a·

o·
ed
a·
ill
ng

he s a n,

Christian, and that if he had a halfpenny in his pocket, he would have given it him, telling him, it was his duty to look upon all his neighbours as his brothers and fifters, and love them accordingly. "Yes, papa," fays he, I love her better than my " fifters; for the is handfomer than any of them." " Is the fo, faucebox?" fays the fifter, giving him a box on the ear, which the father would probably have refented, had not Joseph, Fanny and the pedlar, at that inftant returned together. -Adams bid his wife prepare fome food for their dinner; she faid, Truly she could not, she had fomething elfe to do. Adams rebuked her for disputing his commands, and quoted many texts of scripture to prove, "That the hushand is the head " of the wife, and she is to submit and obey." The wife answered, It was blasphemy to talk scripture out of church; that fuch things were very proper to be faid in the pulpit, but that it was profane to talk them in common discourse. Joseph told Mr. Adams, he was not come with any defign to give him or Mrs. Adams any trouble, but to defire the favour of all their company to the George, (an alchouse in the parish) where he had bespoke a piece of bacon and greens for their dinner. Mrs. Adams, who was a very good fort of woman, only rather too first in economics, readily accepted this invitation, as did the parfon himfelf by her example; and away they all walked together, not omitting little Dick, to whom Joseph gave a shilling, when he heard of his intended liberality to Fanny.

"

" (

"

" t

16 1

" t

faic

" t

lar

" (

" t

" V

" (

" t

" v

" v

" F

" 0

" C

" a

" a

" a

" k

" 0

" t

" t

" 1

" 1

" }

# CHAP. XII.

Where the good-natured reader will fee fomething which will give him no great pleasure.

THE pedlar had been very inquisitive from the time he had first heard that the great house in this parish belonged to Lady Booby, and had learn'd that the was the widow of Sir Thomas, and that Sir Thomas had bought Fanny, at about the age of three or four years, of a travelling woman: and now their homely but hearty meal was ended, he told Fanny, he believed he could acquaint her with her parents. The whole company, especially the herfelf, started at this offer of the pedlar's. He then proceeded thus, while they all lent their strictest attention: " Though I am now contented " with this humble way of getting my livelihood, I " was formerly a gentleman; for fo all those of " my profession are called. In a word I was a " drummer in an Irith regiment of foot. Whilft " I was in this honourable station, I attended an " officer of our regiment into England a recruit-"ing. In our march from Bristol to Froome " (for fince the decay of the woollen trade, the " clothing towns have furnished the army with a " great number of recruits) we overtook on the " road a woman, who feemed to be about thirty " years old or thereabouts, not very handsome, " but well enough for a foldier. As we came up " to her, she mended her pace, and falling into " discourse with our ladies (for every man of " the party, namely, a fericant two private " men, and a drum, were provided with their wo-" men, except myself), she continued to travel on " with us. I, perceiving she must fall to my " lot, advanced prefently to her, made love to her es in

" in our military way, and quickly fucceeded to " my wishes. We struck a bargain within a mile, " and lived together as man and wife to her dying " day." -- " I suppose," fays Adams, inter-" rupting him, " you were married with a li-" cence; for I don't fee how you could contrive " to have the banns published while you were " marching from place to place."-No, Sir," faid " the pedlar, " we took a licence to go to bed to-" gether without any banns."----" Ay, ay," faid the parson, " ex necessitate, a licence may be " allowable enough; but furely, the other is " the more regular and eligible way."-The pedlar proceeded thus; " She returned with me to " our regiment, and removed with us from quar-" ters to quarters, till at last, while we lay at Gall-" way, she fell ill of a fever, and died. When she " was on her deathbed, she called me to her, and, " crying bitterly, declared, she could not depart " this world without discovering a fecret to me, " which she faid was the only sin which fat heavy " on her heart. She faid she had formerly tra-" velled in a company of gypties, who had made a " practice of stealing away children; that for her " own part she had been only once guilty of the " crime, which, she faid, she lamented more than " all the rest of her fins, since probably it might " have occasioned the death of the parents: for, added she, it is almost impossible to describe the beauty of the young creature, which was about a year and a half old when I kidnapped it. " kept her (for she was a girl) above two years in " our company, when I fold her myfelf for three guineas to Sir Thomas Booby in Somerfetshire. " Now, you know whether there are any more of " that name in this county."-" Yes, " fays Adams, " there are several Boobies who are squires, but " I believe no baronet now alive; besides, it an-" fwers fo exactly in every point, there is no room

r

r

d

I

of

a

in

it-

ne he

a

he

rty

ne,

up

of

ate

VO-

on

my her

in

" for doubt; but you have forgot to tell us the " parents from whom the child was stolen."-"Their name," answered the pedlar, " was An-" drews. They lived about thirty miles from the " fquire; and the told me, that I might be fure to " find them out by one circumstance; for they " had a daughter of a very strange name, Paniela " or Pamela; some pronounced it one way, and " fome the other." Fanny, who had changed colours at the first mention of the name, now fainted away, Joseph turned pale, and poor Dicky began to roar; the parson fell on his knees, and ejaculated many thankfgivings, that this discovery had been made before the dreadful fin of incest was committed, and the pedlar was ftruck with amazement, not being able to account for all this confusion, the cause of which was presently opened by the parson's daughter, who was the only unconcerned person; (for the mother was chaffing Fanny's temples, and taking the utmost care of her); and indeed Fanny was the only creature whom the daughter would not have pitied in her fituation; wherein, though we compaffionate her ourselves, we shall leave her for a little while, and pay a short vifit to Lady Booby.

# C H A P. XIII.

The history returning to the Lady Booby, give fome account of the terrible conflict in her breast between love and pride, with what happened on the present discovery.

THE lady fat down with her company to dinner, but ate nothing. As foon as the cloth was removed, she whispered Pamela that she was taken a little ill, and defired her to entertain her husband and Beau Didapper. She then went up into her chamber, fent for Slipslop, threw herself on the bed,

" ug

be

COI

wit

bec

of

ter

tue

pre

tho

as F

mif

rati

clud

and

a hu

and

with

wor

" h

" U

" ir

" fr

" al

" L

" ti

" cc

" yo

" yo

" fr

" dy

the I

" fu

" an

C

ie

0

la

d

)-

d

in u-

nd

e. n-

Jy

n-

n-);

he

n;

es,

rt

ve

the

er,

·e.

n a

er

he ed,

bed, in the agonies of love, rage, and despair; nor could she conceal these boiling passions longer, without burfting. Slipflop now approached her bed, and askd how her Ladyship did? but instead of revealing her diforder, as the intended, the entered into a long encomium on the beauty and virtues of Joseph Andrews: ending at last with expressing her concern, that so much tenderness should be thrown away on fo despicable an object as Fanny. Slipflop well knowing how to humour her mistress's frenzy, proceeded to repeat with exaggeration, if possible, all her mistress had said, and concluded with a wish that Joseph had been a gentleman, and that she could see her lady in the arms of such a husband. The lady then started from the bed, and taking a turn or two crofs the room, cried out with a deep figh, - " Sure he would make any woman happy."---Your Ladyship." fays she, " would be the happiest woman in the world with " him .--- A fig for custom and nonsense What " vails what people fay? Shall I be atraid of eat-" ing fweatmeats, because people may fay I have a " fweet tooth? If I had a mind to marry a man, " all the world should not hinder me. Your " Ladyship hath no parents to tutelar your infec-" tions; besides, he is of your Ladyship's family " now, and as good a gentleman as any in the " country, and why should not a woman follow " her mind as well as a man? Why should not " your Ladyship marry the brother, as well as " your nephew the fifter? I am fure, if it was a " fragrant crime, I would not perfuade your La-" dyship to it."-" But, dear Slipflop," answered the lady, " if I could prevail on myfelf to commit " fuch a weakness, there is that curfed Fanny in "the way, whom the ideot, -- Oh how I hate and despise him!" -- "She! a little " ugly minx," cries Slipflop, " leave her to me. - I suppose your Ladyship hath heard

" fi

i ti

" d

" f

16 O

" d

" -

" v

" f

" t

" ]

" r

44 1

"

16 1

" }

"

1. t

16 1

"

eag

" I

66

"

"

16 1

crie

Ma

tho

po

In

pre

tak

of Joseph's sitting with one of Mr. Didapper's servants about her; and his master hath
ordered them to carry her away by sorce
this evening. I'll take care they shall not want
affistance. I was walking with this gentleman,
who was below, just when your Ladyship
fent for me"—"Go back," says the Lady
Booby, this instant; for I expect Mr Didapper will soon be going. Do all you can; for
I am resolved this wench shall not be in our family. I will endeavour to return to the company; but let me know as soon as she is carried
off." Slipslop went away; and her mistress began to arraign her own conduct in the following
manner:

" What am I doing? How do I fuffer this paf-" fion to creep imperceptibly upon me! How ma-" ny days are past fince I could have submitted to " alk myself the question? - Marry a footman! " distraction! Can I afterwards bear the eyes of " my acquaintance? But I can retire from them; retire with one in whom I propose more happi-" ness than the world without him can give me! "Retire-to feed continually on beauties, which " my inflamed imagination fickens with eagerly gazing on; to fatisfy every appetite every defire " with their utmost wish. Ha! and do I doat " thus on a footman! I despise, I detest my pas-" fion .- Yet why? Is he not generous, gentle, "kind?—Kind to whom? to the meanest wretch, " a creature below my confideration. Doth he " not?-Yes, he doth prefer her : curse his beau-" ties, and the little low heart that possesses them; " which can basely descend to this despicable wench, " and be ungratefully deaf to all the honours I do " him. And can I then love this monfter? "I will tear his image from my bosom, tread on " him, fourn him. I will have those pitiful " charms, which now I despise, mangled in my " fight;

:

p

V

.

r

1.

1-

d

g

1-

a-

to

1

of

1;

1-

e!

ch

·ly

re

pat

af-

le,

h,

he

ıu-

n;

ch,

do

Vo,

on

ful

my

ht;

" fight; for I will not fuffer the little jade I hate " to riot in the beauties I contemn. No, though I " despise him myself; though I would spurn him " from my feet, was he to languish at them, no " other should taste the happiness I scorn. Why " do I fay happiness? To me it would be misery. " - To facrifice my reputation, my character, my " rank in life, to the indulgence of a mean and a " vile appetite. - How I detest the thought! How " much more exquisite is the pleasure resulting " from the reflection of virtue and prudence, than " the faint relish of what flows from vice and fol-" ly? Whither did I fuffer this improper, this " mad paffion to hurry me, only by neglecting to " fummon the aid of reason to my assistance? " Reason, which hath now set before me my de-" fires in their proper colours, and immediately " helped me to expel them. Yes, I thank Heaven " and my pride, I have now perfectly conquered "this unworthy passion; and if there was no ob-" stacle in its way, my pride would disdain any pleasures which could be the consequence of so " base, so mean, so vulgar"-Slipslop returned at this instant in a violent hurry, and with the utmost eagerness cried out, -" O Madam, I have strange " news. Tom the footman is just come from the "George; where, it feems, Joseph and the rest " of them are a jinketting; and he fays there is a man who hath discovered, that Joseph and Fan-" ny are brother and fifter."-" How, Slipflop!" cries the lady in a furprise. - " I had not time, Madam," cries Slipflop, " to enquire about par-" ticles, but Tom fays it is most certainly true."

This unexpected account entirely obliterated all those admirable reflections which the supreme power of reason had so wisely made just before. In short, when despair, which had more share in producing the resolutions of hatred we have seen taken, began to retreat, the lady bestated a mo-

ment,

ment, and then forgetting all the purport of her foliloguy, difmiffed her woman again, with orders to bid Tom attend her in the parlour, whither the now hastened to acquaint Pamela with the news. Pamela faid, she could not believe it; for she had never heard that her mother had loft any child, or that she had ever had any more than Joseph and herself. The lady flew into a violent rage with her, and talked of upftarts, and disowning relations, who had fo lately been on a level with her, Pamela made no answer; but her husband, taking up her cause, severely repimanded his aunt for her behaviour to his wife; he told her, if it had been earlier in the evening, she should not have staid a moment longer in her house; that he was convinced, if this young woman could be proved her fifter, the would readily embrace her as fuch, and he himself would do the same: he then defired the fellow might be fent for, and the young woman with him; which Lady Booby immediately ordered, and thinking proper to make fome apology to-Pamela for what she had said, it was readily accepted, and all things reconciled.

The pedlar now attended, as did Fanny and Jofeph, who would not quit her; the parson likewise was induced, not only by curiosity, of which he had no small portion, but his duty, as he apprehended it to follow them; for he continued all the way to exhort them, who were now breaking their hearts, to offer up thanksgivings, and be joy-

ful for fo miraculous an escape.

When they arrived at Booby-hall, they were presently called into the parlour, when the pedlar repeated the same story he had told before, and insisted on the truth of every cirumstance; so that all who heard him were extremely well satisfied of the truth; except Pamela, who imagined, as she had never heard either of her parents mention such an accident, that it must be certainly false; and

except

ex

he

fh

fr

cu

ne

20

hi

tai

tio

cir

pe

ve

fal

fu

ph

the

tab

ma

lov

mii

afk

per bea

the

Par

whi

faid

affe

to 1

cou

quic and

was

Pam

1

8

c

5.

d

r

d

h

a-

r.

ig

er

en

n.

er

nd

lie

an

1

to-

ac-

0.

ce-

ch

ap-

all

ing

oy.

ere

llar

in-

hat

of

the

iich

and

cept

except the Lady Booby, who suspected the false-hood of the story from her ardent desire that it should be true; and Joseph, who seared its truth, from his earnest wishes that it might prove false.

Mr. Booby now defired them all to suspend their curiosity, and absolute belief or disbelief, till the next morning, when he expected old Mr. Andrews and his wife to fetch himself and Pamela home in his coach, and then they might be certain of certainly knowing the truth or falsehood of this relation; in which, he said, as there were many strong circumstances to induce their credit, so he could not perceive any interest the pedlar could have in inventing it, or in endeavouring to impose such a falsehood on them.

The Lady Booby, who was very little used to fuch company, entertained them all, viz. her nephew, his wife, her brother and fifter, the beau and the parson, with great good-humour at her own table. As to the pedlar, the ordered him to be made as welcome as possible by her servants. the company in the parlour except the disappointed lovers, who fat fullen and filent, were full of mirth; for Mr. Booby had prevailed on Joseph to ask Mr. Didapper's pardon; with which he was perfectly fatisfied. Many jokes pass'd between the beau and the parson, chiefly on each other's dress; these affording much diversion to the company. Pamela chid her brother Joseph for the concern which he expressed at discovering a new fifter. She faid, if he loved Fanny as he ought, with a pure affection he had no reason to lament being related to her. — Upon which Adams began to difcourse on Platonic love; whence he made a quick transition to the joys in the next world: and concluded with strongly afferting, that there was no fuch thing as pleafure in this. At which Pamela and her husband smiled on one another.

Vol. II. Ii This

66

66

66

46

"

er

h

lo

it

w

0

th

fo

th

m

th

0

fü

vi

fa

ec

de

0

h

PI

W

This happy pair proposing to retire (for no or ther person gave the least symptom of desiring rest) they all repaired to several beds provided for them in the same house; nor was Adams himself suffered to go home, it being a stormy night. Fanny indeed often begged she might go home with the parson; but her stay was so strongly insisted on, that she at last, by Joseph's advice, consented.

## CHAP. XIV.

Containing several curious night-adventures, in which Mr. Adams fell into many hair-breadth scapes, partly owing to his goodness, and partly to his inadvertency.

A BOUT an hour after they had all separated (it being now past three in the morror Beau Didapper, whose passion for Fanny permitted him not to close his eyes, but had employed his imagination in contrivances how to fatisfy his defires, at last hit on a method by which he hoped to effect it. He had ordered be fervant to bring him word where Fanny lay, and and received his information; he therefore arose, put on his breeches and night-gown, and stole foftly along the gallery which led to her apartment; and being come to the door, as he imagined it, he opened it with the least noise possible, and entered the chamber. A favour now invaded his noftrils which he did not expect in the room of fo fweet a young creatire, and which might have probably had no good effect on a cooler lover. However, he groped out the bed with difficulty; for there was not a glimple of light, and opening the curtains, he whifpered in Joseph's voice, (for he was an excellent mimic), " Fanny, my angel. I am come to inform " thee that I have discoved the falsehood of the

I'

C

S,

18

d

u

m

1-

S,

d

rd

a -

nd

ry

to

16

A

ot

e.

f

he

ole

1.

ni-

111

he

ry

" ftory we last night heard. I am no longer thy " brother, but thy lover; nor will I be delayed the " enjoyment of thee one moment longer. You " have fufficient affurances of my constancy not to " doubt my marrying you, and it would be want " of love to deny me the possession of thy charms." -So faying, he difencumbered himfelf from the little clothes he had on, and leaping into the bed, embraced his angel, as he conceived her, with great rapture. If he was furprifed at receiving no answer, he was no less pleased to find his hug returned with equal ardour. He remained not long in this fweet confusion; for both he and his paramour prefently discovered their error. Indeed it was no other than the accomplished Slipslop whom he had engaged; but though the immediately knew the person whom she had mistaken for Jofeph, he was at a lofs to guess at the representative of Fanny. He had fo little feen or taken notice of this gentleworman, that light itself would have afforded him no affiftance in his conjecture. Didapper no fooner had perceived his miftake, than he attempted to cicape from the bed with much greater hafte then had made to it; but the watchful Slipflop prevented him. For that prudent woman being disappointed of those delicious offerings which her fancy had promifed her pleafure, refolved to make an immediate facrifice to her virtue. Indeed she wanted an opportunity to heal fome wounds which her late conduct had, the feared, given her reputation; and, as the had a wonderful presence of mind, she conceived the person of the unfortunate beau to be luckily thrown in her way to restore her lady's opinion of her impregnable chaffity. At that infant therefore, when he offered to leap from the bed, she caught fast hold of his shirt, at the same roaring out, "O " thou villain! thou haft attacked my chaftity, and, " I believe ruined me in my sleep; I will swear a Ii 2

W

fh fh

CC

ri

m

fa

le

te

W

th

110

CC

th

W

iIT

je

fir

fo

ly Sl

pu

m in

Sl

th ha

di

fh

66

" rape against thee, I will prosecute thee with the " utmost vengeance." The beau attempted to get loofe, but she held him fast, and when he struggled, she cried out, " Murder! murder! rape! " robbery ! ruin !" At which words par fon Adams, who lay in the next chamber, wakeful, and meditating on the pedlar's difcovery, jumped out of bed, and without staying to put a rag of cloaths on, hastened into the apartment whence the cries proceeded. He made directly to the bed in the dark, where laying hold of the beau's skin, (for Slipslop had torn his shirt almost off), and finding his skin extremely foft, and hearing him in a low voice begging Slipflop to let him go, he no longer doubted but this was the young woman in danger of ravishing, and immediately falling on the bed, and laying hold on Slipflop's chin, where he found a rough beard, his belief was confirmed; he therefore refcued the beau, who presently made his escape, and then turning towards Slipflop, received fuch a cuff on his chops, that his wrath kindling inflantly, he offered to return the favour fo floutly, that, had poor Slipflop received the fift, which in the dark past by her, and fell on the pillow, she would most probably have given up the ghost. - Adams miffing his blow, fell directly on Slipflop, who cuffed and scratched as well as she could; nor was he behind-hand with her in his endeavours, but happily the darkness of the night befriended her. - She then cried she was a woman; but Adams answered, she was rather the devil, and if she was, he would grapple with him; and being again irritated by another stroke on his chops, he gave her such a remembrance in the guts, that she began to roar loud enough to be heard all over the house. Adams then feizing her by the hair (for her double clout had fallen off in the scuffle), pinned her head down to the bolfter, and then both called for lights together. The Lady Booby, who was as wakeful as any of her

guests, had been alarmed from the beginning; and being a woman of a bold spirit, she slipt on a nightgown, petticoat, and flippers, and taking a candle, which always burnt in her chamber, in her hand, the walked undauntedly to Slipflop's room, where the entered just at the instant as Adams had difcovered by the two mountains which Slipflop carried before her, that he was concerned with a female. He then concluded her to be a witch, and faid he fancied those breasts gave fuck to a legion of devils. Slipflop feeing Lady Booby enter the room, cried, " Help! or I am ravished," with a most audible voice; and Adams perceiving the light, turned hastily, and faw the lady (as she did him) just as she came to the feet of the bed: nor did her modesty, when she found the naked condition of Adams, fuffer her to approach farther.—She then began to revile the parson as the wickedest of all men, and particulary railed at his impudence in chusing her house for the scene of his debaucheries, and her own woman for the object of his bestiality. Poor Adams had before difcovered the countenance of his bedfellow, and now first recollecting he was naked, he was no less confounded than Lady Booby herfelf, and immediately whipt under the bed clothes, whence the chafte Slipflop endeavoured in vain to that him out. Then putting forth his head, on which, by way of ornament, he wore a flannel night-cap, he protested his innocence, and asked ten thousand pardons of Mrs. Slipflop for the blows he had ftruck her, vowing he had mistaken her for a witch. Lady Booby then casting her eyes on the ground, observed something sparkle with great lustre, which, when she had taken it up appeared to be a very fine pair of diamond buttons for the fleeves. A little farther the faw the fleeve itself of a thirt with laced ruffles. " Hey-day!" fays she. " what is the meaning of " this?" \_\_\_ O, Madam, " fays Slipslop, " I Ii 3

C

I

te

n

77

tl

di

re

0

cr

Fa

fe

of

A

in

66

66

"

66

66

his

ly,

" don't know what hath happened, I have been fo " terrified Here may have been a dozen men in " the room." " To whom belongs this laced " fhirt and jewels," fays the Lady. -- " Un-" doubtedly," cries the parfon, "To the young " gentleman whom I miftook for a woman on " coming into the room, whence proceeded all " the subsequent mistakes; for if I had suspected " him for a man, I would have feized him had he " been another Hercules, though he feems indeed " rather to represent Hylas." He then gave an account of the reason of his rising from bed, and the rest, till the lady came into the room; at which, and the figures of Slipflop and her gallant, whose heads only were visible at the opposite corners of the bed, she could not refrain from laughter; nor did Slipflop perfift in accufing the parfon of any motions towards a rape. The lady therefore, defiring him to return to his bed as foon as the was departed, and then ordering Slipflop to rie and attend her in her own room, fhe returned herfelf thither, When the was gone, Adams renewed his petitions for pardon to Mrs. Slipflop, who, with a most Christian temper, not only forgave, but began to move with fuch courtefy towards him, which he taking as a hint to be gone, immediately quitted the bed, and made the best of his way towards his own; but unluckily, instead of turning to the right, he turned to the left, and went to the apartment where Fanny lay, who (as the reader may remember) had not flept a wink the preceding night, and who was fo hagged out with what had happened to her in the day: that, notwithanding all thoughts of her Joseph, she was fallen into so profound a sleep, that all the noise in the adjoining room had not been able to diffurb her. Adams groped out the bed, and turning the clothes down foftly, a custom Mrs. Adams had long accustomed him to, crept in, and deposited

his carcafe on the bed-post, a place which that good

woman had always affigned him.

1

t

.

g

1-

e-

h

t-

lin

b

ad

ed is

As the cat or lap-dog of fome lovely nymph for whom ten thousand lovers languish, lyes quietly by the fide of the charming maid, and, ignorant of the scene of delight on which they repose, meditates the future capture of a moufe, or furprifal of a plate of bread and butter; fo Adams lay by the fide of Fanny, ignorant of the paradife to which he was fo near: nor could the emanation of fweets which flowed from her breath, overpower the fumes of tobacco which played in the parfon's noftrils. And now fleep had not overtaken the good man, when Joseph, who had fecretly appointed Fanny to come to her at the break of day, rapped foftly at the chamber-door, which, when he had repeated twice, Adams cry'd, " come in, whoever you " are." Joseph thought he had mistaken the door, though she had given him the most exact directions; however, knowing his friend's voice, he opened it, and faw fome female vestments lying in a chair. Fanny waking at the fame instant, and firetching out her hand on Adams's beard, she cry'd out,-" O heavens! where am I?" " Blefs " me! where am 1?" faid the parson. Fanny scream'd, Adams leapt out of bed, and Jofeph stood, as the tragedians call it, like the statue of Surprife, " How came the into my room?" cried Adams. " How came you into hers?" cried Joseph in an aftonishment. " I know nothing of the mat-" ter," answered Adams, " but that she is a vestal " for me. As I am a Christian, I know not whe-" ther she is a map or woman. He is an infidel " who doth not believe in witchcraft. They as " furely exist now as in the days of Saul. My clothes " are bewitched away too, and Fanny's brought " into their place." For he still insisted he was in his own apartment; but Fanny denied it vehemently, and faid, his attempting to perfuade Joseph of

fuch a falsehood, convinced her of his wicked " How!" faid Joseph in a rage, hathhe " offered any rudeness to you?" - She answered. the could not accuse him of any more than villain. oufly stealing to bed to her, which she thought rudeness sufficient, and what no man would do without a wicked intention. Joseph's great opinion of Adams was not fo eafily to be ftaggered. and when he heard from Fanny, that no harm had happened, he grew a little cooler; yet still he was confounded, and as he knew the house, and that the women's apartment were on this fide, Mrs. Slipflop's room and the men's on the other, he was convinced that he was in Fanny's chamber. Affuring Adams therefore of this truth, he begged him to give fome account how he came there. Adams then, standing in his shirt, which did not offend Fanny, as the curtains of the bed were drawn, related all that had happened; and when he had ended, Joseph told him, it was plain he had mistaken, by turning to the right instead of the left. "Odfo!" cries Adams, that's true, as " fure as fixpence, you have hit on the very " thing." He then traverfed the room, rubbing his hands, and begged Fanny's pardon, affuring her he did not know whether the was man or woman That innocent creature believing all he faid, told him she was no longer angry, and begged Jofeph to conduct him into his own apartment, where he should stay himself till she had put her clothes on. Joseph and Adams accordingly departed, and the latter foon was convinced of the mistake he had committed; however, whilf he was dreffing himself, he often afferted he believed in the power of witchcraft notwithstanding, and did not see how a Christian could deny it.

7

th

th

OV

wa

afl

in

be

the

Th

cei

pit

fel

Oc.

the

par

the

who

ftor ver

oth

## CHAP. XV.

The arrival of Gaffer and Gammer Andrews, with another person not much expected, and a persect solution of the difficulties raised by the pedlar.

As foon as Fanny was drefs'd, Joseph returned to her, and they had a long conversation together, the conclusion of which was, that if they found themselves really to be brother and sister, they vowed a perpetual celibacy, and to live together all their days, and indulge a Platonic friendship for each other.

The company were all very merry at breakfast, and Joseph and Fanny rather more cheaful than the preceding night. The Lady Booby produced the diamond button, which the beau most readily owned, and alledged that he was very subject to walk in his sleep. Indeed he was far from being ashamed of his amour, and rather endeavoured to infinuate, that more than was really true had pass'd between him and the fair Slipslop.

Their tea was scarce over, when news came of the arrival of old Mr. Andrews and his wife. They were immediately introduced, and kindly received by the Lady Booby, whose heart went now pit-a pat, as did those of Joseph and Fanny. They felt perhaps little less anxiety in this interval than Oedipus himself, whilst his fate was revealing.

C

S

d

e

1

W

Mr. Booby first opened the cause, by informing the old gentleman that he had a child in the company more than he knew of, and taking Fanny by the hand, told him this was that daughter of his who had been stolen away by gypsies in her infancy. Mr. Andrews, after expressing some associations from the had never lost a daughter by gypsies, nor ever had any other children than Joseph and Pamela These words

6:

..

66

66

6.

66

..

66

"

66

16 (

"

"

cc I

11

"

ec t

66

4. 1

ec f

cc v

16 1

ec t

. Ct ]

66 1

cc b

" I

" d

ce f

cc f

" a

66 le

of the

words were a cordial to the two lovers, but had a different effect on Lady Booby. She ordered the pedlar to be called, who recounted his ftory as he had done before.—At the end of which old Mrs. Andrews running to Fanny, embraced her, crying out, "She is, she is, my child." The company were all amazed at this disagreement between the man and his wife; and the blood had now forfaken the cheeks of the lovers, when the old woman turning to her husband, who was more furprifed than all the rest, and having a little recovered her own spirits, delivered herself as fol-"You may remember, my Dear, when " you went a serjeant to Gibraltar, you left me big " with child; you staid abroad, you know, up-" wards of three years. In your absence I was " brought to bed, I verily believe, of this daugh-" ter, whom I am fure I have reason to remem-" ber, for I fuckled her at this very breast till the " day she was stolen from me. One afternoon, " when the child was about a year, or a year and " half old, or thereabouts, two gypfy women " came to the door, and offered to tell my for-" tune. One of them had a child in her lap: I " fhewed them my hand, and defired to know if " you was ever to come home again, which I " remember as well as if it was but yesterday, "they faithfully promifed me you should. "I left the girl in the cradle, and went to draw " them a cup of liquor, the best I had; when " I returned with the pot (I am fure I was " not absent longer than whilft I am telling it to " you) the women were gone. I was afraid they " had stolen fomething, and looked, and looked, " but to no purpose, and heaven knows I had " very little for them to steal. At last, hearing " the child cry in the cradle, I went to take it " up ; -- but O the living! how was I furprifed " to find, instead of my own girl that I had put in the cradle, who was as fine a fat thriving child " as you shall fee in a summer's day, a poor fick " ly boy, that did not feem to have an hour to " live. I ran out, pulling my hair off, and crying " out like any mad after the women, but never " could hear a word of them from that day to " this. When I came back, the poor infant (which " is our Joseph there, as fout as he now ftands) " lifted up his eyes upon me fo piteoufly, that to be " fure notwithstanding my passion, I could not " find in my heart to do it any mischief. A neigh-" bour of mine happening to come in at the fame " time, and hearing the cafe, advised me to take " care of this poor child, and God would per-" haps one day restore me my own. Upon which " I took the child up and fuckled it, to be fure, " all the world as if it had been of my own " natural body. And as true as I am alive, in a " little time I loved the boy all to nothing as if it " had been my own girl.-Well, as I was faying, " times growing very hard, I having two children, " and nothing but my own work, which was " little enough, God knows, to maintain them, " was obliged to ask relief of the parish; but in-" flead of giving it me, they removed me, by " justices warrants, fifteen miles, to the place " where I now live, where I had not been long " fettled before you came home. Joseph (for " that was the name I gave him myself-the " Lord knows whether he was baptized or no, or " by what name). Joseph, I say, seemed to me to " be about five years old when you returned: for " I believe he is two or three years older than our " daughter here, (for I am thoroughly convinced " she is the same); and when you saw him, you " faid he was a chopping boy, without ever mind-" ing his age; and fo I feeing you did not suspect " any thing of the matter, thought I might e'en as " well keep it to myself, for fear you should not " love him as well as I did. And all this is veri" tably true, and I will take my oath of it before

" any justice in the kingdom."

The pedlar, who had been fummoned by the order of Lady Booby, listened with the utmost attention to Gammer Andrews's story, and when she had finished, asked her if the supposititious child had no mark on its breast? To which she anfwered, "Yes, he had as fine a strawberry as " ever grew in a garden." This Joseph acknowledged. and, unbuttoning his coat at the interceffion of the company, shewed to them. " Well," fays Gaffer Andrews who was a comical fly old fellow, and very likely defired to have no more children than he could keep, " you have proved, I " think, very plainly, that this boy doth not " belong to us; but how are you certain that the " girl is ours?" The parson then brought the pedlar forward, and defired him to repeat the story which he had communicated to him the preceding day at the alehouse; which he complied with, and related what the reader, as well as Mr. Adams hath feen before. He then confirmed, from his wife's report, all the circumstances of the exchange, and of the strawberry on Joseph's breast. At the repetition of the word-Strawberry, Adams, who had feen it without any emotion, ftarted, and cried, "Bless me! something comes into my " head." But before he had time to bring any thing out, a fervant called him forth. he was gone, the pedlar affured Joseph, that his parents were persons of much greater circumstances than those he had hitherto mistaken for fuch; for that he had been stolen from a gentleman's house, by those whom they call gypsies, and had been kept by them during a whole year, when looking on him as in a dying condition, they had exchanged him for the other healthier child, in the manner before related. He said, as to the name of his father, his wife had either never known or

liv ex m to

m

to

to

to ne M his ga the wh

diff wo his wh of wit

for

him Hid plie er f

José ear his

retti foor agre

and

forgot it; but that she had acquainted him he lived about forty miles from the place where the exchange had been made, and which way, promising to spare no pains in endeavouring with him

to discover the place.

r

1

n

e

But fortune, which feldom doth good or ill, or makes men happy or miferable by halves, refolved to fpare him this labour. The reader may pleafe to recollect, that Mr. Wilson had intended a journey to the West, in which he was to pass through Mr. Adams's parish, and had promised to call on him. He was now arrived at the Lady Booby's gates for that purpose, being directed thither from the parson's house, and had fent in the servant whom we have above feen call Mr. Adams This had no fooner mentioned the discovery of a stolen child, and had uttered the word Strawberry, than Mr. Wilson, with wildness in his looks, and the utmost eagerness in his words, begged to be shewed into the room, where he entered without the least regard to any of the company but Joseph, and embracing him with a complexion all pale and trembling, defired to fee the mark on his breast; the parson followed him capering, rubbing his hands; and crying out, Hic est quem quæris ; inventus est, &c. Joseph complied with the request of Mr. Wilson, who no fooner faw the mark, than abandoning himself to the most extravagant rapture of passion, he embraced Joseph with inexpressible ecstafy, and cried out in sears of joy, " I have discovered my son, I have " him again in my arms!" Joseph was not fufficiently apprifed yet, to tafte the same delight with his father, (for fo in reality he was): however he returned some warmth to his embraces: but he no fooner perceived, from his father's account, the agreement of every circumstance, of person, time, and place, than he threw himfelf at his feet, and embracing his knees, with tears begged his blef-Kk Vol. II..

fing, which was given with much affection, and received with fuch respect, mixed with such tenderness on both sides, that it affected all present; but none so much as Lady Booby, who left the room in an agony, which was but too much perceived, and not very charitably accounted for by some of the company.

## CHAP. XVI.

fo

b

Being the left. In which this true history is brought to a happy conclusion.

FANNY was very little behind her Joseph, in the duty she expressed towards her parents, and the joy she evidenced in discovering them. Gammer Andrews kissed her, and said she was heartily glad to see her: but for her part she could never love any one better than Joseph. Gasser Andrews testissed no remarkable emotion; he blessed and kissed her, but complained bitterly, that he wanted his pipe, not having had a whist that morning.

Mr. Booby, who knew nothing of his aunt's fondness, imputed her abrupt departure to her pride, and disdain of the family into which he was married: he was therefore desirous to be gone with the utmost celerity: and now, having congratulated Mr. Wilson and Joseph on the discovery, he faluted Fanny, called her fister, and introduced her as such to Pamela, who behaved

with great decency on the occasion.

el, that she wished him a good journey; but was too disordered to see any company; he therefore prepared to set out, having invited Mr. Wilson to his house; and Pamela and Joseph both so inssted on his complying, that he at last consented, having first obtained a messenger from Mr Booby, to acquaint

The

quaint his wife with the news; which, as he knew it would render her completely happy, he could not prevail on himself to delay a moment in acquainting her with.

The company were ranged in this manner. The two old people, with their two daughters, rode in the coach; the Squire. Mr. Wilson, Joseph, Parfon Adams, and the pedlar proceeded on horse-back.

In their way Joseph informed his father of his intended match with Fanny; to which, though he expressed some reluctance at first, on the eagerness of his son's instances he consented, saying, if she was so good a creature as she appeared, and he described her, he thought the disadvantages of birth and fortune might be compensated. He, however, insisted on the match being deferred till he had seen his mother; in which Joseph perceiving him positive, with great duty obeyed him, to the great delight of Parson Adams, who, by these means, saw an opportunity of sulfilling the church forms, and marrying his parishioners without a licence.

Mr. Adams, greatly exulting on this occasion, for fuch ceremonies were matters of no small moment with him), accidentally gave spurs to his horse, which the generous beast disdaining, for he was of high mettle, and had been used to more expert riders than the gentleman who at prefent bestrode him, for whose horsemanthip he had, perhaps, fome contempt, immediately ran away full fpeed, and played fo many antic tricks, that he tumbled the parson from his back; which Joseph perceiving, came to his relief. This accident afforded infinite merriment to the fervants, and no less frighted poor Fanny, who beheld him as he passed by the coach; but the mirth of the one and terror of the other were foon determined, when the parson declared he had received no damage.

Kk 2

The horse having freed himself from his unworthy rider, as he probably thought him, proceeded to make the best of his way; but was stopped by a gentleman and his fervants who were travelling the opposite way, and were now at a little distance from the coach. They foon met; and as one of the fervants delivered Adams his horfe, his mafter hailed him, and Adams looking up, prefently recollected he was the justice of peace before whom he and Fanny had made their appearance. parfon prefently faluted him very kindly; and the justice informed him, that he had found the fellow who attempted to fwear against him and the young woman the very next day, and had committed him to Salifbury gaol, where he was charged with many robberies.

Many compliments having passed between the parson and the justice, the latter proceeded on his journey, and the former having, with some disdain, refused Joseph's offer of changing horses, and declared he was as able a horseman as any in the kingdom, remounted his beast; and now the company again proceeded, and happily arrived at their journey's end, Mr. Adams, by good luck rather than by good riding, escaping a second fall.

The company arriving at Mr. Booby's house, were all received by him in the most courteous, and entertained in the most splendid manner, after the custom of the old English hospitality, which is still preserved in some very sew families in the remote parts of England. They all passed that day with the utmost satisfaction; it being, perhaps, impossible to find any set of people more solidly and sincerely happy. Joseph and Fanny found means to be alone upwards of two hours, which were the shortest, but the sweetest imaginable.

In the morning, Mr. Wilson proposed to his son to make a visit with him to his mother; which, notwithstanding his dutiful inclinations, and a longing

him the pro Wi that tree the

lon

Wi bly qui bra It is to f

the very mile part ban

put

(

arof of I refu be p thin Her was rous a pa all f floor hat, dref

and

longing defire he had to fee her, a little concerned him, as he must be obliged to leave his Fanny: but the goodness of Mr. Booby relieved him; for he proposed to fend his own coach and six for Mrs. Wilson, whom Pamela so very earnestly invited, that Mr. Wilson at length agreed with the entreaties of Mr. Booby and Joseph, and suffered the coach to go empty for his wife.

On Saturday night the coach returned with Mrs. Wilson, who added one more to this happy assembly. The reader may imagine, much better and quicker too than I can describe, the many embraces and tears of joy which succeeded her arrival. It is sufficient to say, she was easily prevailed with to follow her husband's example, in consenting to

the match.

On Sunday Mr. Adams performed the fervice at the Squire's parish church, the curate of which very kindly exchanged duty, and rode twenty miles to the L dy Booby's parish so to do; being particularly charged not to omit publishing the

banns, b ing the third and last time.

At length the happy day arrived, which was to put Joseph in the possession of all his wishes. He arose and dressed himself in a neat, but plain suit of Mr. Booby's, which exactly fitted him; for he refused all finery; as die Fanny likewise, who could be prevailed on by Pamela to attire herfelf in nothing richer than a white demitty night gown. Her shift, indeed, which Pamela presented her, was of the finest kind, and had an edging of lace round the bosom; she likewise equipped her with a pair of fine white thread stockings, which were all the would accept; for the wore one of her own thort round-eared caps, and over it a little straw hat, lined with cherry coloured ribbon. In this dress she came forth from her chamber, blushing and breathing sweets; and was by Joseph, whose eyes sparkled fire, led to the church, the whole family

mily attending, where Mr. Adams performed the ceremony; at which nothing was fo remarkable, as the extraordinary and uneffected modefly of Fanny, unless the true Christian piety of Adams, who publicly rebuked Mr. Booby and Pamela for laughing in fo facred a place, and on fo folemn an occafion. Our parson would have done no less to the highest prince on earth: for though he paid all fubmission and deference to his superiors in other matters, where the least spice of religion intervened, he immediately lost all respect of persons. It was his maxim, that he was a fervant of the Highest, and could not, without departing from his duty, give up the least article of his honour, or of his cause, to the greatest earthly potentate. Indeed he always afferted, that Mr. Adams at church, with his furplice on, and Mr. Adams without that ornament, in any other place, were two very different perions.

When the church rites were over, Joseph led his blooming bride back to Mr. Booby's, (for the distance was so very little, they did not think proper to use a coach); the whole company attended them likewise on foot; and now a most magnisicent entertainment was provided, at which Parson Adams demonstrated an appetite surprising, as well as furpassing every one present: indeed the only persons who betrayed any deficiency on this occasion, were those on whose account the feast was provided. They pampered their imagination with the much more exquisite repast which the approach of night promifed them; the thoughts of which filled both their minds, though with different sensations; the one all defire, while the other

had her wishes tempered with fears.

At length, after a day passed with the utmost merriment, corrected by the strictest decency; in which, however, Parson Adams, being well filled

wit fac the wit ter. iew fold was me tur fha you a li her con 1100 the. eha fled carr thi war fwe nob nigh thei

they equi gen pou in th OCC: and in h

I

very forn first with ale and pudding, had given a loofe to more facetiousness than was usual to him; the happy, the bleffed moment arrived, when Fanny retired with her mother, her mother-in-law, and her fifter. She was foon undreffed; for she had no jewels to deposit in their caskets, nor fine laces to fold with the nicest exactness. Undressing to her was properly discovering, not putting off ornaments: for as all her charms were the gifts of nature, the could divest herself of none. How, reader, shall I give thee an adequate idea of this lovely young creature: the bloom of roles and lilies migh a little illustrate her complexion, or their smell her fweetness; but to comprehend her intirely, conceive youth, health, bloom, neatness, and innocence, in her bridal bed; conceive all thefe in their utmost perfection, and you may place the charming Fanny's picture before your eyes.

Joseph no sooner heard she was in bed, than he fled with the utmost eagerness to her. A minute carried him into her arms, where we shall leave this happy couple to enjoy the sprivate rewards of their constancy; rewards so great and sweet, that I apprehend Joseph neither envied the noblest duke, nor Fanny the finest duchess that

night.

1

t

d

10

)-

d

n

as

he

118

aft

on

he

hts

if.

her

oft

in

lled with The third day, Mr. Wilson and his wife, with their son and daughter, returned home; where they now live together in a state of bliss scarce equalled. Mr. Booby hath, with unprecedented generosity, given Fanny a fortune of two thousand pounds, which Joseph hath laid out in a little estate in the same parish with his father, which he now occupies, (his father having stocked it for him); and Fanny presides with most excellent management in his dairy: where, however, she is not at present very able to bustle much, being, as Mr. Wilson informs me in his last letter, extremely big with her sirst child.

Mr.

Mr. Booby hath presented Mr. Adams with a living of one hundred and thirty pounds a year. He at first refused it, resolving not to quit his parishioners, with whom he had lived so long; but on recollecting he might keep a curate at this living, he hath been lately inducted into it.

The pedlar, besides several handsome presents both from Mr. Wilson and Mr. Booby, is, by the latter's interest, made an exciseman; a trust which he discharges with such justice, that he is greatly

beloved in his neighbourhood.

As for the Lady Booby, she returned to London in a few days where a young captain of dragoons, together with eternal parties at cards, soon

obliterated the memory of Joseph.

Joseph remains blessed with his Fanny, whom he doats on with the utmost tenderness, which is all returned on her side. The happiness of this couple is a perpetual fountain of pleasure to their fond parents; and what is particularly remarkable, he declares he will imitate them in their retirement; nor will be prevailed on by any booksellers, or their authors, to make his appearance in high life.

THE END.

see hy y is is is ir e, e-rs, gh



